

12614.26  
C H R Y S A L:

OR, THE  
ADVENTURES

OF A  
G U I N E A.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED  
VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES:

WITH  
CURIOUS and INTERESTING ANECDOTES  
of the most Noted Persons in every Rank of  
Life, whose Hands it passed through,

IN  
AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND,  
GERMANY AND PORTUGAL.

---

—Hold the Mirror up to Nature,  
To show Vice its own image, Virtue its own Likeness,  
And the very Age and Body of the Times  
His form and Pressure. SHAKESPEARE.  
Qui capit, ille facit.

---

By an ADEPT.

---

V O L. II.

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for J. WATSON, M. PEARCE, S. LEWIS,  
G. LONGMAN, and W. CROWDER.

---

M,DCC,LXXXV.





# CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

## BOOK THE FIRST.

### CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of Chrysal's new master.  
Chrysal attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady.  
Polite reception - - - Page 1

### CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family supper.  
Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of  
the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by  
another dream - - - 6

### CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonish-  
ment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's lady. Her vera-  
city in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and  
his lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true - 12

### CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays  
with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His  
knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity.  
Chrysal enters into the service of her Grace - - 19

### CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His ex-  
tensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his  
fellow protestants in Germany. He is strangely affected at the  
news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character - 23

### CHAP. VI.

The true use of court favour. The biter bitten. An easy way  
to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of of-  
fice, in hindering an house to be built, instead of an hen-  
coop, and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most  
of a common. A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking  
the fields in an undress - - - 27

### CHAP. VII.

An old visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Cha-  
rity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest  
Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The  
best salve for a broken character - - - 34

## C H A P. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad 40

## C H A P. IX.

Chrysal changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate clyster-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings Chrysal into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win - - - 45

## C H A P. X.

Chrysal's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike - - - 52

## C H A P. XI.

A venerable matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. Momus plays successively upon Doctor Hunchback, and Mother Brimstone. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character - - - 56

## C H A P. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an unusual friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. Chrysal enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character - - - 67

## C H A P. XIII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. Chrysal changes his service for that of a Lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for a husband - - - 73

## C H A P. XIV.

Chrysal, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences 80

## C H A P. XV.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, Chrysal comes into the possession of a minister

# CONTENTS.

v

minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs - - - 83

## C H A P. XVI.

Chrysal's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures, and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. Chrysal enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son - - - 90

## C H A P. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned romantic style. Chrysal quits the service of the general, and, after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace - - - 95

## C H A P. XVIII.

They arrive at the Hague. Political conversation between a Dutchman and a Jew. They differ in opinion. Aminadab leaves his friend Van Hogan in great distress - - - 101

## C H A P. XIX.

Aminadab bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for Africa. Chrysal remains with a Dutch banker. The principles and conscience of a good Dutchman. Chrysal is sent into Germany. His opinion of the Dutch - - - 109

## C H A P. XX.

Chrysal's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions - - - 113

## C H A P. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. Chrysal is carried to his destined master - - - 120

## C H A P. XXII.

How Chrysal found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolution to maintain the consequence of his rank - - - 125

## C H A P. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. Chrysal is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon - 131

C H A P.



## CONTENTS.

## CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the Passover in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained - - - 134

## BOOK THE SECOND.

## CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice - - - 138

## CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality, properly resented, brings Chrysal into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humble magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the fight of Chrysal - 142

## CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle - 146

## CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. Chrysal finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger - - - 151

## CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul - - - 156

## CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives, and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. Chrysal changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the king of Bulgaria, and the probable consequences of the war - - - 160

## CHAP. VII.

Chrysal arrives in Vienna, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in England. He is sent to Peru. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to Europe to prepare matters better - - - 166

CHAP.

# CONTENTS.

vii

## CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which Spain and Portugal are to be brought into the war with England. He proposes to his brother, to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design - - 157

## CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in Germany, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states - 173

## CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. Chrysal changes his service - 178

## CHAP. XI.

Chrysal proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of Germany. A short view of the war between the French and English, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it into Germany. Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment - - 181

## CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy English soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign to a public trial. His hopes are disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin - 189

## CHAP. XIII.

Chrysal arrives in Brussels. The great source of jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. The history concluded in character - - 194

## CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains Chrysal's master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place - - - 199

## CHAP. XV.

Continued. His lordship's scheme to fling his rival, unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law often spoils sport 204

## CHAP. XVI.

Chrysal's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a great man - 210

CHAP:

## CONTENTS.

## CH A P. XVII.

Continued. He comes to England, where his services are rejected by the state, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand 216

## CH A P. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in England. He that will not when he may, &c. It is often better to play a poor game than stand out. Chrysal arrives at Lisbon - 223

## CH A P. XIX.

Chrysal comes, at Lisbon, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. Chrysal's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service - 226

## CH A P. XX.

Chrysal meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest Aminadab. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at Lisbon, in which Chrysal suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. Chrysal enters into a new service - 232

## CH A P. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of Pheron and Iliffa - 238

## CH A P. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits Pheron, and obtains his consent. He employs an English sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs - 245

## CH A P. XXIII.

The sailor goes to London, buys a ship, and returns to Lisbon, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a French ship. He lands his passengers at Alexandria, returns home and marries. Chrysal quits his service - 250

## CH A P. XXIV.

Chrysal arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion - 255

CHRYSAI:



---

---

# CHRYSA'L:

## OR, THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

---

### CHAP. I.

*Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSA'L's new master. CHRYSA'L attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.*

I HAVE often been apprehensive, that the manner in which I express myself, may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning; the signification of words in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense, without such a periphrasis, as would take up too much time in so complicated scenes as those I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are signified by the same word, how easy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take a wrong one?

For instance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the



immutability of the virtues which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty; and yet, how variously, how contradictorily is it applied?

On the *Royal Exchange*, he is a *good* man, who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodness* assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, though he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws, human and divine: while in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance; they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match, goes *damn'd* fast; as the one that loses goes *damn'd* slow. The weather in summer is *hell fire* hot, in winter *hell fire* cold.

Now, what sense can the very *Devil* himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions? Though indeed these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they shew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common conversation.

But I am not at leisure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some cautions to prevent your falling into it, in respect of what I say to you.

You

You are to observe then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or physical truth, or propriety of speech. But when I speak my own sentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do), I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the sense usually given to them, in the particular subject I may be then speaking of; as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all, but is forced to wrest known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) distinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and, what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world: but wanting friends and interest, to advance him to those dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had solicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary, (for as he was not in the secret, he had no share of the spoils) though his circumstances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might take the notice of his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dressed in all her best clothes, and expecting him with the utmost impatience. 'My dear (said she) how could you stay so broad so late? I have been waiting for you above these two hours, and was just going without seeing you.'—'So late my dear! it is scarcely six o'clock!

' But where are you going in such haste ?'——' To the  
 ' Bishop's ; the Rector of—— died of an apoplectic  
 ' fit, as he was taking his nap after dinner this even-  
 ' ing, and you know my intimacy with the Bishop's  
 ' lady entitles me to ask any thing from her.'——' But,  
 ' child, this is not in her power to give, and even if  
 ' it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance  
 ' to expect !'——' This diffidence has been your ruin !  
 ' You are always afraid of asking, as if there was  
 ' ruin in being refused ; but this is not my case! *Ask*  
 ' *and you shall have*, is my text ! Now-a-days no-  
 ' thing is got without it.'——' Yes, child, but too  
 ' frequent or improper asking brings contempt.'——  
 ' The manner, the manner of asking is the thing !  
 ' and you cannot think I want to be taught that now,  
 ' after having lived so long among the Great ? Often  
 ' have I known a request, *properly* made, gain a man  
 ' a place which he has never dream'd of ! As to  
 ' the greatness of this living, never mind that ! the  
 ' greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to  
 ' the person who gets it for you ! What money  
 ' have you got about you ? we shall make a *party*  
 ' perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound  
 ' note ; I may have occasion for that too, to make  
 ' a *bet*.'

' There, my dear, is the money I received to-day ;  
 ' I'll step up for the note : but pray, my dearest, take  
 ' care what you do : It is our all ! And be sure you  
 ' are not tempted to any thing like simony. It is a  
 ' great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever  
 ' rising, if it is detected.'——' And the fool, that is  
 ' detected, deserves never to rise. You may call a  
 ' thing by what nonsensical name you please ; but if  
 ' knowledge of the world were to prevent people's  
 ' rising in it, I do not know who would be upper-  
 ' most now-a-days. Bring me the note, and leave the  
 ' rest to me. You shall know nothing of what I in-  
 ' tend till 'tis done, and then the fault, if any, will  
 ' be



‘be all mine. Here *Jane*, settle the furbelows of my scarf; and, *John*, call a chair to the door directly.’—‘Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you; I do not desire to know what you intend: But, remember, my dear, this note is our all.’—‘Never fear; the chair is come, and I must lose no time. You will divert yourself with your children, or books, I suppose, or go to the coffee-house. Perhaps I may not return till ’tis late.’—‘I wish you success, my dear, and pray be cautious.’

With these words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Bishop’s.

When she came there, the footman answered that it was not his lady’s *night*, and she was not at home: but my mistress had lived too long among the Great to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my mistress shewn up without any farther difficulty.

The Bishop’s lady was sitting at a snug party, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deign’d a nod; but turning to the footman, ‘I thought, *sirrah*, (said she) that I was not to be at home this evening! I suppose I shall have all the mob of the town let in upon me.’—‘Dear Madam, (replied my mistress) the man is not to blame: He told me you were not at home; but having some very earnest business, I made bold to break through your orders, but I hope for your pardon, when you know the cause of my intrusion.’—‘O Madam, (returned the Lady) you know I am always glad of your company, I only chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray,



‘be seated, Madam; as soon as the *rubber* is up I shall wait upon you.’——Dear Madam, (added my mistress) you need not give yourself that trouble; now I am with you, my business can wait your leisure.’

---

## C H A P. II.

*A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream.*

WHEN the rubber was finished, my mistress was asked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken suddenly ill, which she did, and sat out the whole evening; her success at cards keeping up her spirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair she came about; but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and what was still worse, several *by-bets*, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company were gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out—‘And now, pray, madam, may I ask what was the great business that brought you here this evening? (said she) Unlucky business it has been for me, I know; for I have never held a card since you came; but I shall take care that rascal, who let you in, shall never serve me so again! He shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the moment I am up in the morning.’——Dear madam, (replied my mistress), unabash’d at such a salute, have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all! Will you please to sit down to one sober party of *piquet*! You are always

## ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

7

‘ too *hard* for me, yet I’ll venture all my winnings,  
 ‘ and perhaps what I have to say, in the mean time,  
 ‘ may compensate for my intrusion.

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o’clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, ‘ Dear madam, that  
 ‘ is right! Have you heard of the sad accident that  
 ‘ happened this evening?’—‘ Not I (replied the other)  
 ‘ pray what is it?’—‘ Why poor Doctor — was  
 ‘ taken ill shortly after dinner, and died in his chair!’  
 ‘ —Aye then, I suppose, he had plumb-porridge and  
 ‘ over-eat himself! and so burst a pudding, as we say to  
 ‘ children, Ha, ha, ha!—Ha, ha, ha!’—‘ But pray,  
 ‘ madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do  
 ‘ you think? I dreamed last night that I saw you at  
 ‘ court, on some *great* occasion, with just such a dia-  
 ‘ mond necklace on, as the Countess’s, which you  
 ‘ had bought with five hundred pounds that you won  
 ‘ from me on a *bet*; you laying, that my husband  
 ‘ would, and I that he would not, get the Doctor’s  
 ‘ living. Well, to be sure, there must be something  
 ‘ more than ordinary in it; for, can you believe it?  
 ‘ this very morning, I put a bank-note for five hun-  
 ‘ dred pounds in my pocket, here it is; though I did  
 ‘ not think of the poor man’s death, till I heard it as  
 ‘ I came by this evening, when my dream ran so  
 ‘ strongly in my head that I could not forbear break-  
 ‘ ing in upon you, a rudeness I should never have  
 ‘ been guilty of on any other occasion.’—‘ Dear ma-  
 ‘ dam, you need make no apology to me; you know  
 ‘ your company is always welcome. I am always at  
 ‘ home to you!’—‘ But, madam what do you think of  
 ‘ my dream?’—‘ I do not know, I only wish it were

‘ to

' to prove true! For five hundred pounds could never  
 ' come more seasonably.'—' Then you must win it;  
 ' for my heart is set upon making the *bet*, and I as-  
 ' sure you, I have such a regard for you, that I  
 ' do not even wish you to lose; and that is what few  
 ' gamesters can say.'—' You are a pleasant creature!  
 ' but as for the *BET*, it shall be upon condition  
 ' that my Lord is not under any engagement to the  
 ' Minister, or her Grace, who got him his Bishop-  
 ' ric. If he is disengaged, I will lay you, and you  
 ' shall lose, my girl, if it was ten times as much, and  
 ' there's encouragement for you to hold. The bell  
 ' rings! Will you walk down, and take a bit of sup-  
 ' per? There is no body but my Lord and I; but  
 ' do not take the least notice of any thing about the  
 ' matter, nor even seem to have heard of the Doctor's  
 ' death, should my Lord mention it; but muster up  
 ' all your spirits, and be as entertaining as you can,  
 ' for I always work him up best, when he goes to bed  
 ' in a good humour.'

The piquet-match being thus at an end, I was  
 paid away to the Bishop's Lady, whose winnings and  
 expectations sent her to her supper in high spirits,  
 where she found his Lordship already seated in a ve-  
 ry thoughtful mood.

After the usual complimentary expletives that usher  
 in every polite conversation—" Pray, my Lord, (says  
 ' my new mistress to her husband) what will you eat?  
 ' Shall I help you to a bit of this fricasee? I be-  
 ' lieve it is very good.'—' No, my dear, I thank  
 ' you, (replied his Lordship); I have not the least  
 ' appetite:—What is it, pray?"—' Sweet-breads and  
 ' cocks combs, (returned his lady) you used to like  
 ' them, and they are very nice; or will you help  
 ' yourself to a bit of that fowl before you? some-  
 ' thing you must eat.'—' No, my dear, I am obliged  
 ' to your care; but I do not choose any thing to-  
 ' night; I am very well: We all eat too much; re-  
 ' pletion



‘pletion kills half the people of England—We eat  
‘too much!’—‘You are going to be *bip’d*, my dear!  
‘*John*, give your master a glass of *Madeira*; fill the  
‘glass! eating never hurt any one, who washed down  
‘his victuals with a glass of good wine. Horse-  
‘meals, indeed, are enough to choak human crea-  
‘tures. So! do not you find yourself better now?  
‘Taste this fricasee; you cannot think how good it  
‘is.’—‘Well, you will have your way. You make  
‘me do as you please, things never so contrary to my  
‘inclination. Do you call this a fricasee? I thought  
‘fricasees had spice put in them. This is as insipid  
‘as chop’d hay! Lord deliver us from such cooks!  
‘The badness of servants, in general, seems to be a  
‘judgment on the vices of the age.’—‘Well, my  
‘dear, taste that fowl; it looks like a good one, and  
‘the cook could not spoil that. Pray, Madam, shall  
‘I trouble you to help his Lordship to a leg and a  
‘wing, and a bit of the breast?’—‘You give me too  
‘much! I shall never be able to eat all this! besides  
‘you know, my dear, I choose a bit of the rump.’—  
‘Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have the  
‘rump. But what has happened to make you so low-  
‘spirited this evening?’—‘O child, who can be other  
‘than low-spirited, when such instances of mortality  
‘happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell  
‘but the misfortune may be his own next moment?  
‘There’s Doctor ———, poor man, was taken off  
‘this evening, without a minute’s warning to prepare  
‘for such a tremendous change, just after he had  
‘made an hearty dinner. Here *John*, take away my  
‘plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep af-  
‘ter dinner again.’—‘And, *John*, give your master  
‘another bumper of *Madeira*; that was what the  
‘Doctor wanted: He eat a great deal, and did not  
‘allow himself any drink. Drink good wine, and  
‘never fear that eating will hurt you.’—‘Ah! but  
‘that was not the case of his Grace of ———,  
who



‘ who lies this moment in the agonies of death. His  
 ‘ physicians left him two hours ago. The Lord pre-  
 ‘ pare us all, and give us notice of his coming. He  
 ‘ did not stint himself of wine; he took his bottle  
 ‘ cheerfully, good man.’—‘ Chearfully, did you say?  
 ‘ you should have said sottishly; for he has done no-  
 ‘ thing but drink for these many years past. He has  
 ‘ run into the opposite extreme from the Doctor,  
 ‘ drinking too much, and not eating enough to sup-  
 ‘ port nature. And I hope you do not say he has  
 ‘ gone without warning at fourscore; he has had time  
 ‘ enough to prepare. But why should these exam-  
 ‘ ples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the  
 ‘ Doctor, nor drink like his Grace, and are young  
 ‘ enough to be son to the youngest of them; why  
 ‘ then should you fear their fate? Here, *John*, give  
 ‘ me a pint glass half full of *Madeira*, and reach me  
 ‘ three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if  
 ‘ you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit  
 ‘ of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with  
 ‘ you.’

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper,  
 without being able to join in the conversation; but  
 as soon as his Lordship’s taking the jellies made a  
 pause in his Lady’s tenderness, she called for a glass  
 of wine, and bowing to the Bishop, drank to him by  
 the title of *his Grace*, very gravely.

His Lordship stared, and his Lady started, while  
 she finished her glass without any emotion, and seem-  
 ed quite unconscious of having said any thing unusual  
 or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them  
 more; when the lady, unable to contain her surprise,  
 ‘ Dear Madam, (said she) what have you said? or  
 ‘ how came you to address my Lord by that title?’—  
 ‘ I hope, Madam, (replied the other), I have not  
 ‘ said any thing improper. You really frighten me!  
 ‘ I hope I have not been failing in my respect, or ad-  
 ‘ dressed his Lordship by any improper title!’—‘ I  
 ‘ cannot

‘ cannot say an improper one indeed; but one that  
‘ does not belong to him, at least as yet,’ returned  
the lady. ‘ Dear madam, what do you mean? pray  
‘ do not distress me! but you must divert yourself  
‘ surely! It is not possible that I could fail in my re-  
‘ spect to his *Grace*?—‘ Ha! ha! ha! there it is a-  
‘ gain. Fail in your respect! no! you only raised your  
‘ respect too high. You called him his *Grace*, that’s  
‘ all.’—‘ And is that all? Thank heaven that I did;  
‘ and long live his *Grace*, I say again, (said she drop-  
‘ ping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand),  
‘ long live your *Grace*! There is, there must be  
‘ truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.’

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had  
hitherto continued to sup up his jelly, without seem-  
ing to take any notice what they were saying, could  
not forbear shewing some emotion; for he had the  
strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely de-  
fended their credit, especially since his present eleva-  
tion had confirmed those of his grandmother: ‘ What  
‘ dreams, pray, good madam?’ said he, addressing my  
late mistress with a visible anxiety; ‘ what dreams do  
‘ you mean? Those which were thought to have re-  
‘ spect to me are understood to be already accom-  
‘ plished.’—‘ Please your *Grace*, (the impulse of the  
‘ spirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by any o-  
‘ ther title!) please your *Grace*, I say, I dreamed last  
‘ night, as I told your Lady but just now, that I met  
‘ her at court, on some very great occasion, as fine as  
‘ hands could make her, (I told her this just now, be-  
‘ fore I knew one syllable of his *Grace*’s death), and  
‘ that she came up to me smiling, and thanked me  
‘ for the cause of her coming there, for it was I who  
‘ had made you a great man! Now, what could this  
‘ possibly mean, but what has happened here this mo-  
‘ ment; when, by giving you this title first, (and  
‘ Lord knows, I did it without the least design, or  
‘ even being sensible of it when I did it), I may in  
‘ some

‘some manner be said to have made you the great man it belonged to.—Let the world say what they will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I think mine is *out* now.’

She had run on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined; but that was far from being the case; he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopped, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the Doctor’s living, and, as such, resolved to humour it, and not to interrupt his meditations; but addressing herself to the other, ‘Indeed, madam, (said she), I do not know what to say to this affair. When you told me your dream just now, I made nothing of it; but this account of his Grace’s death almost staggers me. Well, if this succeeds, and who knows what may happen, I shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams.’

---

### CH A P. III.

*A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop’s Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.*

**B**Y this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, ‘Pray, madam, (said he), what time had you this vision or dream? in the night or towards the morning?’—‘In the morning, my Lord, (replied she),  
‘at



' at the conclusion of my second sleep; and indeed  
 ' it made such an impression upon my mind, that I  
 ' could not go to sleep after; for it was not in the  
 ' confusion of common dreams! I saw every thing  
 ' distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very  
 ' place; and particularly, your Lady appeared as  
 ' plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless us! and  
 ' by the same token, she was dressed in white damask,  
 ' spick and span new, and had the most beautiful  
 ' diamond necklace on, that ever my eyes beheld; and  
 ' charmingly she looked, I thought.'

' I really do not know what to say to this matter,  
 ' (replied his Lordship with great deliberation); the  
 ' visions of the morning have ever been held in most  
 ' repute; for then the mind has recovered from the  
 ' fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert  
 ' its abilities, and look forward into the time to come.  
 ' There are some good circumstances, I own, in this  
 ' dream. I am glad that my wife was not dressed in  
 ' colours; that would have been an ill omen; but  
 ' white is the peculiar garment of success; angels are  
 ' clad in white; and in this case particularly, it may  
 ' prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emble-  
 ' matical type of the purity of the episcopal func-  
 ' tion; and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only  
 ' in degree. As for the necklace, there may be more  
 ' in that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are  
 ' the *insignia* of dignity, and, in the *Jewish* priest-  
 ' hood particularly, were symbolical of the highest  
 ' order; for none of the priests wore them but the  
 ' supreme or high-priest, whose dignity answered  
 ' nearly to that of *Primate* with us; and if such far-  
 ' ther blessings should be in the Divine will, it were  
 ' impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours. Per-  
 ' haps I speak unintelligibly to you; but the opi-  
 ' nions of the learned must be delivered in their  
 ' phrase.'—' Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear  
 VOL. II. B your

‘ your Lordship for ever ; I always am the wiser and  
 ‘ the better for hearing your Lordship.’

‘ Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams,  
 ‘ (resumed his Lordship), though the scepticism of  
 ‘ these unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of  
 ‘ wiser antiquity was of another opinion, of which  
 ‘ numberless instances might be given out of the Ho-  
 ‘ ly Scriptures. And among the *Gentiles*, the great-  
 ‘ est of their poets says, *Onar ek Dios esti*; that is,  
 ‘ in English, *dreams proceed from Jove*; that is, from  
 ‘ the supreme Deity, whom they erroneously called  
 ‘ by that name. And, though the heathens were  
 ‘ guilty of great superstitions in this particular of  
 ‘ dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them,  
 ‘ but in the methods which they used to procure  
 ‘ them; such as offering sacrifices, and sleeping in  
 ‘ the skins of the victims, and many others; whereas  
 ‘ the dream that comes from Heaven, comes unsought  
 ‘ and unexpected, and should be received with reve-  
 ‘ rence. And if this is such, and I own it has much  
 ‘ of the appearance, Thy will be done, O Lord!  
 ‘ Thy servant submits, as it is his duty.’

Greatly as they must have been edified by this elab-  
 orate dissertation, the ladies had much ado to re-  
 frain from laughing in his face while he delivered it,  
 especially his wife, who knew not which to admire  
 most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with  
 which it was received. But the dreamer had a far-  
 ther scheme in her head; to carry on which she now  
 got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Bi-  
 shop, ‘ My Lord, (said she), may I beg your Lord-  
 ‘ ship’s blessing. I hope, and am confident in that  
 ‘ hope, that mine was not a common dream, from  
 ‘ the impression it made on my mind, which could  
 ‘ not have been stronger; if I had actually been pre-  
 ‘ sent at your Lady’s kissing the King’s hand on your  
 ‘ promotion: but if my zeal has hurried me too far  
 ‘ in my expressions of it, I rely on your goodness to  
 ‘ forgive

‘forgive my fault, which was rather an enthusiasm  
 ‘than a design; and so, my Lord, I beg leave to  
 ‘wish you a good night.’

With these words she withdrew; and her patroness,  
 wondering she had not thrown her a wink, and de-  
 siring to have a laugh with her at her husband’s credu-  
 lity, went as if to see her to her chair; when turning  
 with her into another room, ‘That was an excellent  
 ‘thought, (said she), and will make our affair quite  
 ‘easy, if he is not engaged.’——‘I do not under-  
 ‘stand you, madam, (replied the other), pray what  
 ‘thought do you mean?’——‘Why, child, that of  
 ‘the dream; what else should I mean?’——‘A  
 ‘thought, dear madam! Why, do not you think I  
 ‘was serious, and the dream real?’——‘Not one word  
 ‘of either, I assure you; and I wonder at your ask-  
 ‘ing me that question here, where no one is present  
 ‘to observe us.’——‘Dear Madam, you have quite  
 ‘mistaken me, I assure you. It is true, I can jest  
 ‘sometimes; but in this, give me leave to say, that  
 ‘I was most serious; and what is more, that I am  
 ‘sure the event will confirm it.’——‘You astonish me,  
 ‘Madam; I declare I looked upon the whole as a  
 ‘mere *finesse*, to promote our scheme about the Doc-  
 ‘tor’s living, for your husband!’——‘I am sorry, Ma-  
 ‘dam, that you should have such an opinion of me;  
 ‘as that I could invent such a story on any account!’  
 ——‘Well, (as I said before, though in another  
 ‘sense) I know not what to make of the whole.  
 ‘But as you are so positive, and my Lord seems in-  
 ‘clined to believe you, perhaps there may be more  
 ‘in it than I can see, and therefore I shall suspend my  
 ‘opinion till I see the end of it. This though I pro-  
 ‘mise, that my assistance shall not be wanting to either  
 ‘part of the dream.’——‘And I promise you that I  
 ‘will make good all I said, particularly about the  
 ‘wager and the necklace; and so, Madam, I wish  
 B 2 ‘you.



'you a good night: I shall do myself the pleasure to  
'call and see how you are in the morning.'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and  
threw the Bishop's Lady into a meditation as pro-  
found as his Lordship's. 'Can this be possible? (said  
'she to herself) and yet, how could she have the face  
'to stand it out so, if it was not true? But then it  
'was but a dream! Aye, but my husband says,  
'dreams are not to be slighted; and he should know  
'more than I, at least of those things that are to be  
'found in books. And what if it should be so after  
'all? and that I should take place of Mrs. —, and  
'and Mrs. —, and Mrs. —, and all the rest of  
'the Bishops Ladies!—That would be charming!  
'And I believe in my soul I shall; for I have always  
'looked upon them with a contempt that showed I  
'should be one day their superior. Well, *Happy*  
'*come lucky*, says the proverb; my endeavours shall  
'not be wanting, as I promised Mrs. —, whose  
'five hundred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the  
'Archbishopric.'

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief  
of the dream, she went in to his Lordship, whom she  
found absorbed in thought about the *vision*: 'Well,  
'my dear, (said she, sitting down by him) what is  
'your opinion of this strange matter? I own it is a-  
'bove my comprehension. At first I imagined she  
'might have been only in jest, and have invented the  
'whole story merely to divert your lowness of spirits;  
'but when I went out with her into the next parlour,  
'and put it home to her, she still persisted in it, and  
'confirmed the truth of what she said by such  
'asseverations, that I could not avoid believing her.'

'But, my dear, (replied his Lordship) she said  
'she told you her dream before she came in here, or  
'had heard a word of his Grace's illness.'—'She most  
'certainly did, my Lord; and with other circum-  
'stances, that make the whole still more surprising!

'Pray

"Pray what time did the Doctor die, my dear?"—  
 "About half an hour after four."—"That is most  
 wonderful! And pray, my dear, who is to have  
 his living? are you under any engagement about  
 it?"—"No, child, I am not; nor have I yet deter-  
 mined whom to give it to. But why do you ask  
 these questions? What are they to the purpose of  
 the dream?"—"I shall tell you, my Lord. You  
 must know then, that she came here about four  
 o'clock, just as I had got up from dinner, all in the  
 greatest hurry; and with a kind of wildness, I do  
 not know how, in her looks, told me her dream;  
 but with some circumstances, that I know her bash-  
 fulness would not permit her to mention before you;  
 and these were, that I had bought the diamond  
 necklace she thought I had on at court, with five  
 hundred pounds which I had won from her, on a  
 wager that you would give her husband the Doctor's  
 living. Now as he was not even sick at the time of  
 her telling me this, there could be no design in it;  
 and this is what makes me take the more notice  
 of the matter."

"But are you sure, child, that she told you this so  
 early as four o'clock?"—"Rather before it, my  
 dear; and what makes me so positive about it is,  
 that a little after she had finished her story, she hap-  
 pened to look at her watch, but it was down, and  
 so she asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that  
 she might set by it: and I remember it wanted ex-  
 actly six minutes of four."—"Pray let me look at  
 your watch; have you not altered it since?"—"No, my  
 dear; but why do you ask?"—"Because it is nine  
 minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an  
 hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when  
 he died, and his and mine were exactly together;  
 so that the six minutes which your watch wanted of  
 four, and the nine minutes it is faster than mine,  
 make a quarter before four, which was three quar-

ters before he died. This is most wonderful ! for there could be no design or art in it. This is most wonderful ! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times ; as for instance, that in DUBLINCOURT, for it could be no other than a dream ; and that other of the great Duke of BUCKINGHAM's rise, and afterwards of his death, as is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian \*, not to mention many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it ; you may give it to whom you please : though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family ; beside that he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom, his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect him as a father. — Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What assurance ! to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters : if it was for no other reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time. \* There may be something in that ; I do not like such interfering in my conduct neither ; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment ; but take care that you do not do any thing improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that ; but even so, it should be kept a secret ; I must know nothing of the matter. — I thank you, my dear Lord ; I shall be sure to observe your directions ; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as a happy presage of the rest ; but you must not be wanting to yourself ; you had better, I think, go to her Grace, and see what may offer to promote our hopes. — That is not a bad thought, my dear ; but



‘but it grows late; in the morning we shall see what is to be done.’ Saying this, they withdrew, whether we must not follow them; for of the genial bed, with most mysterious reverence I deem.

---

#### CHAP. IV.

*History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace.*

I HAVE observed your surprize and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop’s easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was in a manner in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occasioned her being taken into his family, where she lived several years as an humble companion to his Lady. As she was handsome, his Lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his Lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account, as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her Ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the

the Chaplain, to whom his Lordship gave a small vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have seen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state she was bred in improved, or rather sharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enabled her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Bishop and his Lady. This affair had made such an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing else all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually secured the grant in favour of my late mistress, from all danger of revocation.

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below; upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his Lordship, with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered, that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be disagreeable, I hope,' (replied his Lordship), and if he is at leisure—'At leisure, my Lord!' (replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her), he is, he must be at leisure: no business can interfere with his duty. I'll step for him this moment.—'You need not give yourself that trouble, madam,' (returned his Lordship); *John*, do you go, and tell Mr. — that I should be glad to speak with him; for, madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the *living* of the poor Doctor. It is what I have long resolved, though I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and I give it to him now, thus early  
'and

and *unwashed*, to spare his modesty, and save myself from the solicitations of others.'—'Long live, God bless your Grace! (said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in ecstasy), for so I see it will be; every thing will come out just according to my dream. I could not forbear sending to the *late* Archbishop's just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for fear my known attachment to your Lordship should make it taken notice of) brought me word, *that he was at peace*.'—This completed the Bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to enquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

I must wish you joy, madam, (said the Bishop's Lady), of this advance in your fortune, though I am almost angry that my Lord did not let me into the secret. I have lost some hours happiness by his reserve; for I always make the happiness of my friends my own.'—'Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And give me leave, madam, to wish you joy of his Lordship's promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it.'—'The necklace I suppose you mean? Ha, ha, ha!'—'I do indeed, dear madam, and of every other happiness that can attend so elevated a station.'

Her husband now entered in the utmost agitation of spirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme, (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the *bet* himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly, for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her); and the ladies, not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the Bishop's signing the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mistress



treſs was paid her *bet*, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſſful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her Grace's levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called his Lady to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow hers, in which I was; and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his Lordſhip entered her Grace's levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocèſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this miſfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her Grace, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank note of twenty pounds about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, underſtood her Grace, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of *mankind* moſtly from *books*, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhewed his reſpect for his patroness, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her Grace was ſurpriſed, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant inſolence* of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhowing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change; and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſſly threw the reſt, *among which I was*, into her

her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so notorious a benevolence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself, (for respect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty), as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her *Grace* by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream, to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that, when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly stepped up to her, and begged leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

---

## CHAP. V.

*The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner to relieve his fellow Protestants in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at first put him into some confusion; but recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that ‘sensible of her *Grace*’s great humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an instance—‘Pray, my Lord, no compliments

‘ compliments (said her Grace, interrupting him  
 ‘ with a look and accent not very encouraging), I  
 ‘ am not at present at leisure for them, and if you  
 ‘ have no other business’—‘ May it please your  
 ‘ Grace (replied the Bishop), your virtues are above  
 ‘ compliment; and I come to give you an opportu-  
 ‘ nity of exerting them, not solely to praise them.’—  
 ‘ I do not understand you, my Lord, and I am in some  
 ‘ haste.’—‘ I most humbly beg your Grace’s pardon;  
 ‘ I shall not delay you long. To come then briefly  
 ‘ to the purpose, I must inform your Grace, that out  
 ‘ of the income which it has pleased the divine Pro-  
 ‘ vidence, through your Grace’s means, to give me,  
 ‘ I have thought it my duty to lay by some little  
 ‘ matter, to make a return with to the divine bene-  
 ‘ ficence, in charity to his distressed creatures. Now,  
 ‘ as your Grace’s kind interest was the means through  
 ‘ which this ability was conferred upon me, I have  
 ‘ made bold to trouble you with the distribution of  
 ‘ my mite.’—‘ Me, my Lord? You astonish me! I  
 ‘ cannot comprehend you!’—‘ I beg your Grace’s in-  
 ‘ dulgence for a moment. You will forgive this  
 ‘ boldness, when you know the motive—hem!  
 ‘ —hem!

‘ The suffering of my Protestant brethren in Ger-  
 ‘ many (I say brethren, for men should know no di-  
 ‘ stinction but religion), their sufferings, I say, in  
 ‘ this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the  
 ‘ ambition of princes works the ruin of their people,  
 ‘ has made such an impression upon my heart, that I  
 ‘ come to offer this small matter to your Grace, to  
 ‘ be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge  
 ‘ shall see most proper; a trouble which I should  
 ‘ not have presumed to give your Grace, did not I  
 ‘ know that such works of charity are a pleasure to  
 ‘ you; and that the better information which, in  
 ‘ your high rank you must necessarily have, will  
 ‘ enable you to apply it more effectually to their re-  
 ‘ lief



‘ lief than I, in the darkness and ignorance of my  
 ‘ humble station, possibly can. I am almost ashamed  
 ‘ of the smallness of the sum (it is but two thousand  
 ‘ pounds), but it is all that I have yet been able to  
 ‘ save; though I hope to give a better account of  
 ‘ my stewardship another time; and that I shall be  
 ‘ found not to have buried my talent, especially if it  
 ‘ should please the Divine Providence to raise me to  
 ‘ an higher station, and thereby put the means more  
 ‘ liberally into my power.—

‘ I most humbly beg your *Grace*’s forgiveness of  
 ‘ this intrusion on your time. I am your *Grace*’s  
 ‘ most humble servant’—‘ Stay, my Lord (returned  
 ‘ her *Grace*, with a look and accent softened into  
 ‘ the most engaging affability); pray do not go; I  
 ‘ see you so seldom, except *in the crowd*, that I can-  
 ‘ not part with you so soon. I thank you for the  
 ‘ confidence you place in me; and shall apply your  
 ‘ charity to the best of my judgment. Poor people!  
 ‘ they greatly want relief; and if the invincible for-  
 ‘ titude of the *Bulgarian* monarch does not extricate  
 ‘ them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But  
 ‘ every thing is to be hoped for from such an hero.

‘ You are very good to consider the distresses of  
 ‘ the poor people! there are few now who think of  
 ‘ any thing but themselves; so their appetites are  
 ‘ satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suf-  
 ‘ fer. But, my Lord, is there any thing that I can  
 ‘ serve you in? You may depend upon my interest  
 ‘ at all times.’—‘ I am much beholden to your  
 ‘ *Grace*! (replied his Lordship, elevated at such an  
 ‘ offer, and now secure, as he thought, of his hopes);  
 ‘ I am much beholden to your *Grace*! I have had  
 ‘ too much experience of your *Grace*’s goodness to  
 ‘ doubt it. Nothing that I know of at present. If  
 ‘ any thing should happen, I shall be most grateful  
 ‘ to your *Grace* for your kind remembrance. We

‘are all desirous of having our power to do good enlarged.’—

‘Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lordship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But have you heard any thing of the Archbishop of ——— lately?’—‘Not very lately, please your Grace.’—‘I believe that old man will never die. He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment. But he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for many years.’—‘In-d-e-e-d!’—‘What is the matter, my Lord? something seems to ail you.’—‘A sudden faintness has come over me; I must beg your Grace’s pardon; I am your Grace’s most humble servant;’ with which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself—‘O my money, my money! O this cursed dream; my money, my money!’

Her Grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, ‘And is it so, my good lord! does the wind sit that way? Then I can account for your charity. Ha, ha, ha!—But you are disappointed this time, and, I fear, will the next too, if you do not bid better. Two thousand for five thousand a-year! Is that your conscience? But it will never do.’—

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me take a view of my new mistress’s heart, as she sat at her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being here my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress

‘had

had accumulated, having taken entire possession of her soul.

---

## C H A P. VI.

*The true use of court favour. The biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built, instead of an hen-coop, and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common: A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.*

WHILE my late master retired to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reflection of so signal an act of charity, her Grace sat down to her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far completed that she could attend to other business, one of her most favoured domestics told her, that she had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-house and shuffle-board, for the place of tapster to the Lord Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. 'Tapster! (answered her Grace) what is the value of that place? Reach me the list of employments, with their salaries and perquisites, out of that drawer. Let me see: Tapster to the Lord Mayor—aye, here it is! Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'—'A thousand guineas, please your Grace (replied her woman), which I really think enough for it, considering every thing.'—'Do you indeed? But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here as worth five hundred pounds a-year; and is



' that worth no more than a thousand guineas? does  
 ' the fellow value his own life only at two years pur-  
 ' chase?'—' Five hundred pounds a-year! How can  
 ' that be? The salary is no more than sixty! There  
 ' must be some mistake in your return.'—' The sa-  
 ' lary! The salary signifies nothing, it is the per-  
 ' quisites; the perquisites are the thing: Do you  
 ' think any place is valued by the salary? The per-  
 ' quisites of this place are very considerable. Let  
 ' me see;—why, he buys in all the beer and gin  
 ' himself, for which he can charge what price he  
 ' pleases; and then his own account is taken for the  
 ' quantity that is drunk. Aye indeed, there must  
 ' be a mistake in the return, to be sure; but not of  
 ' the kind you mean. The place is rated too low;  
 ' for with such opportunities it must be worth twice  
 ' the sum; and I shall inquire into that matter be-  
 ' fore I dispose of the place. A thousand guineas  
 ' for such a place! I wonder at the fellow's con-  
 ' science, to make such an offer.'—' All this is very  
 ' true; but then there are some circumstances that  
 ' must be considered on the other hand too. You  
 ' know the Lord Mayor's year is almost ended; and  
 ' then who knows whether his successor will continue  
 ' all the servants or not. This one, it certainly is  
 ' most likely he will not; for as he is a known ene-  
 ' my to gambling, and has publicly declared that he  
 ' will put the laws in execution against all such prac-  
 ' tices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a  
 ' fellow who has kept an house that has been so no-  
 ' torious for it, and where so many men have been  
 ' brought to the gallows, and their families to beg-  
 ' gary, to hold a place of such profit under him;  
 ' beside, he has people of his own to provide for,  
 ' who have served his father and himself in such a  
 ' manner as to deserve his confidence and regard; so  
 ' that every chance (to speak in his own way) is  
 ' against this man, which is so well known that no  
 ' body

"body else would bid for the thing at all; where-  
 "fore, if I may presume to speak my opinion, his  
 "offer should be immediately accepted."—"There  
 "may be something in what you say; but then, if it  
 "was so very precarious a place, do you think some  
 "of his customers would not inform him of it: they  
 "certainly must know it."—"Why, the very reason  
 "of my desiring your Grace to close with him direct-  
 "ly is for fear they should tell him, as they undoubt-  
 "edly would, if they suspected his intention in the  
 "least; but he conceals it from them; for the prin-  
 "cipal motive of his quitting the business he is in,  
 "and seeking this place, is because the greatest part  
 "of his customers have got deeply into his debt,  
 "which he can never expect them to pay while he  
 "continues his business; whereas he thinks, if he  
 "can get this place, it will be a good excuse for his  
 "calling in his money, and then the Lord Mayor's  
 "power will protect him from their resentments.  
 "This is the true secret of the matter; for if it was  
 "not on this account, he has a much better opportu-  
 "nity of getting money where he is, than in any  
 "place."—"Well then, be it so; make the best you  
 "can of it; and I care not how soon the fellow is  
 "turned out after. What is the matter? what do  
 "you laugh at?"—"I beg your Grace's pardon; an  
 "odd thought just came into my head; but it does  
 "not signify."—"What is it? Come, I must know it."  
 "Why, I am almost ashamed to mention it; though  
 "it is but a trifle neither, as such matters go now.  
 "Your Grace knows that my husband has a place  
 "under the Lord Mayor. Now it just came into my  
 "head, that when his Lordship comes to wait upon  
 "the King to be knighted, it would be no bad joke  
 "if his Majesty could be prevailed on to knight my  
 "husband also."—"Ha, ha, ha! And so madam has  
 "a mind to be a lady. Why, with all my heart.  
 "There is no great matter in it, to be sure; and I

' see no reason why you should not have that title as  
 ' well as a chandler or shoemaker's wife. Indeed,  
 ' the candidates for knighthood have run so very low  
 ' of late, that a man of honour should be ashamed to  
 ' accept of it. But that is no concern of mine: I  
 ' get the money, and where I can do that, I care not  
 ' if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look to that.  
 ' Well, since you have taken a fancy to stick a fool's  
 ' feather in your cap, tell your goodman, when he  
 ' kneels by his master at the important ceremony,  
 ' not to be too hasty to rise, and I'll take care your  
 ' ambition shall be satisfied; though I do not know  
 ' what we must do then. Your *ladyship* will never  
 ' condescend to put on my shoes, or take away the  
 ' bed-pan; so that I believe I must look out for  
 ' another servant.'—Your Grace is pleased to joke;  
 ' but you are very well convinced, that I have no  
 ' ambition above your service, and shall ever be  
 ' proud to perform the meanest offices about you.  
 ' Indeed, in this affair, I have more respect to your  
 ' Grace's honour than to myself. While I wait  
 ' upon you (and I would not give up that to be  
 ' made a Countess) I am but your servant, let me be  
 ' called by what title I will; but then I think it is  
 ' not proper that you should be waited on by com-  
 ' mon servants, like any other person of your *appa-*  
 ' *rent* rank. As you are the fountain of all honour  
 ' and nobility, you should have nobles to attend you,  
 ' as well as knights, if I could have my wish. And  
 ' it was this tenderness of your Grace's honour, that  
 ' made me so particularly affected at what happened  
 ' yesterday?'—Yesterday! I do not understand  
 ' you: What happened yesterday?'—Your Grace  
 ' may remember that you were so kind, some time  
 ' ago, as to obtain leave for me from the Lord of the  
 ' Manor, to build a little poultry-house in a corner  
 ' of yonder common field. I accordingly set the  
 ' masons at work, and liking the situation, thought it  
 ' was



' was no great trespass to enlarge the yard a little,  
 ' and build a lodge, with a room or two where I  
 ' could get my clothes washed, and drink a dish of  
 ' tea with a friend, at any time I might have a mind  
 ' to be retired; but behold, after the wall of the  
 ' yard was built, and the lodge raised as high as the  
 ' first story, the Bailiff of the manor happened to  
 ' come by, and seeing what I intended, had the inso-  
 ' lence to fly into a passion, and, saying it was an  
 ' encroachment beyond the leave I had obtained,  
 ' obliged the workmen to pull down every stone they  
 ' had laid, though I myself, on receiving notice of it,  
 ' went there, and told him it was by your Grace's  
 ' order, and for your own use, and alleged the ex-  
 ' pence you had been at; but it was all to no pur-  
 ' pose, for he would not leave the place till his or-  
 ' ders were executed. Nor was this all; he has had  
 ' the assurance also to send me word this very morn-  
 ' ing, that he would disfrain the cows that you desir-  
 ' ed me to put to graze in that field, if I do not di-  
 ' rectly pay for their pasture according to the rate he  
 ' is pleased to charge, which is more than I have  
 ' been able to make of the milk, though, by your  
 ' Grace's recommendation, I have had so good cus-  
 ' tomers for it; so that instead of the profit I ex-  
 ' pected to make for you of your dairy, your Grace  
 ' is like to be a loser.'—' Insolent, unreasonable fel-  
 ' low! Not to be content with his own extravagant  
 ' profits, without hindering every body else of com-  
 ' ing in for the least advantage with him: but he has  
 ' neither shame nor conscience, or else he would be  
 ' satisfied with plundering the ponds, and selling the  
 ' fish, and hiring out the grass as he does, without  
 ' putting the parish to the expence of fencing in the  
 ' common, to prevent the people even from walking  
 ' over the grass! But I may, some time or another,  
 ' find a way to be even with him. He stands but  
 ' badly in his master's favour, who despises such ava-  
 ' rice,

\* rice, and would turn him out of his place directly,  
 \* but that unluckily he has it under his hand for  
 \* life: however, I shall watch every opportunity to  
 \* return him the compliment, that I can assure him  
 \* Let him take such liberties with his equals! I'll  
 \* have him to know that he shall treat me with more  
 \* respect.'

\* That is true. Has your Grace heard how cava-  
 \* lierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ——?  
 \* I forget his name. The great beau that made such  
 \* a noise, by dangling after the gentleman's wife.'—  
 \* I know whom you mean. No! I have heard no-  
 \* thing about him: what has been the matter?—  
 \* Ha! ha! ha! I do not believe I shall be able to  
 \* tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace must know,  
 \* that the Beau was walking one morning, in a very  
 \* plain dress, across the upper part of the common,  
 \* where, happening to meet a farmer's maid, going  
 \* to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with  
 \* her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and  
 \* walk with him into an unfrequented part of the  
 \* field, where they sat down under a clump of trees,  
 \* for the sake of a little very innocent conversation,  
 \* to be sure. Well, they had not been there long,  
 \* when one of the under bailiffs, whom this insolent  
 \* fellow keeps to watch the grass, seeing them go  
 \* out of the road, followed them; and coming upon  
 \* them in a very unseasonable minute, not only in-  
 \* terrupted their conversation, but also asked the  
 \* Lord, (whose quality he never suspected), in an im-  
 \* perious manner, how he dared to trample the grass?  
 \* and threatened to take him and his whore before a  
 \* justice, and have them directly sent to Bridewell.  
 \* This insult aggravated the offence of his intrusion  
 \* to such an height, that the Lord in a rage bade the  
 \* scoundrel instantly get out of his sight, or he would  
 \* break his head. Such words from a person of his  
 \* appearance, raised the insolence of office so high,  
 \* that

that the Bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his staff, and knocked his Lordship down, where he belaboured him severely, repeating the word Scoundrel between every blow, till the poor battered Beau was in a most doleful plight, though he had often told him who he was, and roared out his quality, with all his might; but the enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did not believe him.

When he had beaten him as much as he thought he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him along to the highway, where fortunately a coach happened to come by, the owner of which knew his Lordship, and took him up, ordering his servants to apprehend the Bailiff; but he was too nimble for them, and made his escape; and now, finding his mistake, and the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly to his master, and, telling him the story in the most favourable manner for himself, prevailed upon him to promise to stand by him; particularly as he alleged, that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his master's grafts, which could never be kept, if he should be let to suffer for defending it.

In the mean time, the poor Lord was in so very bad a taking, that all the physicians and surgeons in town were gathered about him, by whose assistance he was confined to his bed for near a week. As soon as he was permitted to speak, and see his friends, he sent directly to the head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had used him; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went and applied in person, was to have the fellow removed to another part of the common; nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would make his complaint directly to the Lord of the Manor, if he had not some redress. It is said, he talked of challenging him; but he is one of the grand jury, of



of the court leet, and therefore cannot be called to  
an account that way.

---

## CHAP. VII.

*An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing.  
Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions  
for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth  
of honour. The best salve for a broken character.*

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a person of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcase, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow nearly as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her Grace, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon business, told her, 'That he came to know if she meant to buy in that day, for the report raised in the *Alley*, by their express from abroad, had given such a stroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to the ground, but would most certainly rise again the next day, as soon as the news, which had arrived that morning, should be known; which could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted something to keep up their spirits among so many miscarriages, and divert them from making too close inquiries into the conduct of affairs.'

Why!

‘ Why ! my honest friend *Aminadab* ! (replied her Grace), I must be directed in these matters by you. If you think there is any thing to be got by *buying* in to-day, with all my heart ; though I must own I cannot conceive why I should *sell out* the very last week, to *buy* in this.’

‘ Ah ! my lady, (returned *Aminadab*), there is a mystery in all business, and in none greater than ours. The *Bulgarian King*’s success last week raised people’s spirits so high, that they thought the world was to be all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now that was a time for a prudent person to *sell*, as I advised your Grace ; which we had no sooner done, than instantly comes an express, (*of our own*), with an account that the enemy had turned upon him in their retreat, and entirely vanquished the vanquishers.

‘ This news quite overthrew the spirits raised by the former, and made every one eager to sell out at any loss, for fear the enemy should *get wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now, as this was but a terror raised by ourselves, we take the advantage of it, and so buy in when others are selling out 20 *per cent.* cheaper than we ourselves sold out last week, when the madness bent the other way ; and may perhaps sell again the next, when another packet shall set things right, and bring the people back to their senses. For the senses of the people of this country are as inconstant as the sea, depending entirely upon the winds that blow them news.’

‘ But is it really possible that any people can be such fools ?—‘ O, please your Grace, they are only too rich ! They have more money than they know what to do with ; that is all.’—‘ Then *Aminadab*, we will ease them of some of the burden. But would it not be better to conceal this news for another day ; might not that make them fall still lower ?’

' lower ?'—' But, my Lady, the people want the  
 ' good news.'—' The people may hang themselves  
 ' in despair ! I care not, so I get money.'—' The go-  
 ' vernment though'—' What is the government to  
 ' me. I will get all I can, and then leave them to  
 ' themselves, to sink or swim as they will ; it is all  
 ' one to me.'—' That is true ; your *Grace* says right ;  
 ' a people who do not know, or, at least, will not  
 ' follow their own interest, are not worthy any per-  
 ' son's care, longer than while he can make some-  
 ' thing of them. But we must reserve that stroke  
 ' for another time. This news has got into the of-  
 ' fices, and nothing there is a secret you know. Be-  
 ' sides, the *panic* was too violent to last ; it begins  
 ' to wear off already : in another day, they would  
 ' recover their senses of themselves. I think, there-  
 ' fore, with your *Grace's* approbation, to *buy in* all I  
 ' can to-day, without you had rather lay out your  
 ' money in the supplies for the Protestants of *Ger-*  
 ' *many*.'—' With all my heart, if you can make as  
 ' much of it that way as in the funds, but not other-  
 ' wise. I would not lose one shilling for any people  
 ' under heaven.'

' Your *Grace* has a just notion of the world, and  
 ' of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, I  
 ' must say, that the terms for these supplies are very  
 ' unreasonable, considering how such things have  
 ' been done, for some time past. It is expected that  
 ' people should bring in their money without any  
 ' *premium*, or other advantage, than what was pub-  
 ' licly calculated for at the granting them. But these  
 ' economists will find themselves mistaken. The  
 ' world is wiser now-a-days, than to give up advan-  
 ' tages which they have once got possession of. As  
 ' to that affair, therefore, I should think it better to  
 ' let it stand a little longer, till the necessity becomes  
 ' more urgent, and then they will be glad to come  
 ' into our terms, if it were not that the poor people  
 ' may



' may be ruined in the mean time; so that indeed I am at a loss what to advise your *Grace* to do in so nice an affair.'

' Why, let them be ruined then: it is not my fault; nor is it my business to save them; nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to repair it.'—' I cannot but admire your *Grace's* judgment in all things. You are above the foolish weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution to see your own family perish, rather than injure your own interest to relieve them. I shall obey your *Grace* in all things. I go now to the *Alley*, where business will soon begin.'—' Do, honest *Aminadab*, and fear not; though I could not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a BARONET at least; you have riches enough to support the title.'

' Your *Grace* is very good; our people are all satisfied of your kind intentions: But, alas, that was a severe disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their Synagogues, and the daughters of *Sion* lament it in their songs; but my household shall rejoice in thy favour, and the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it.'

Honest *Aminadab* was no sooner gone, than there entered an agent seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money, but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both ultimately the same.

' May it please your *Grace*, (said he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony) I come to wait upon you, about that place in the ———: that gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give one shil-

'ling more for it.'—'Then let the other have it; I  
 ' will not lose five pence, much less five hundred  
 ' pounds for him.'—'But, please your *Grace*, you  
 ' know what grounds he has to expect it on; besides  
 ' your promise, which cannot be well broken through,  
 ' it was so positive.'—'My promise was only condi-  
 ' tional (in my own intention) that he should give  
 ' me as much as another, and in no other sense will  
 ' I keep it. As for his grounds of expectation, I  
 ' regard them not; let him make the most of them  
 ' where he can.'—'Just as your *Grace* pleases; I on-  
 ' ly took the liberty of speaking my own opinion,  
 ' but always in submission to your's. Not but I must  
 ' own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's resent-  
 ' ment, though not immediately for myself, so much  
 ' as for your *Grace's* character, with which he may  
 ' be provoked to make too free upon such an affair.'  
 '—'Aye! that is liberty, your boasted English liber-  
 ' ty, to speak disrespectfully of your superiors. But  
 ' I despise whatever he can say; nor will I give up  
 ' my own way for fear of his impertinence.'—'Very  
 ' right: your *Grace* is very right. It were by no  
 ' means fit that you should: but then it is to be con-  
 ' sidered, whether this breach of promise may not be  
 ' attended with inconveniences that may overbalance  
 ' the advantages, as it may make others afraid to  
 ' deal with you another time.'—'I will venture that:  
 ' none come to me but for their own advantage, and  
 ' while they can find that, they will scarce stay a-  
 ' way for punctilios. So let me hear no more of  
 ' this, but close with the other directly.'  
 ' Will not your *Grace* please to abate of your de-  
 ' mand for that place in *Ireland*? I really fear you  
 ' rate it too high.'—'Not a shilling! I will not a-  
 ' bate a shilling! Surely I ought to know the value  
 ' of things in *IRELAND* by this time! I have had  
 ' sufficient dealings there to teach me; it has been  
 ' my privy purse for many years.'—'But what I fear  
 ' is,

' is, that if your *Grace* does not fix upon some one  
 ' directly, the lord-deputy may, and that will disap-  
 ' point you; for this place has ever been immediate-  
 ' ly in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dis-  
 ' honour on him to give it up.'——' Dishonour in-  
 ' deed! I am much concerned for his honour cer-  
 ' tainly! And as for his naming any one to con-  
 ' tradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he  
 ' does that. The example of his predecessor will  
 ' teach him.'——' However, if your *Grace* pleases,  
 ' to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him, and  
 ' tell him that you have a friend whom you design  
 ' to recommend.'——' With all my heart; you may  
 ' if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate  
 ' one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know  
 ' that places in that country are either mere pensions,  
 ' without any thing to do, or even necessity of ever  
 ' going there at all; or where that cannot be dis-  
 ' pensed with, from the nature of the place, that no  
 ' learning, no abilities are requisite? If it was here  
 ' indeed, where knowledge in a profession is abso-  
 ' lutely necessary to a place in it, there might be  
 ' something in higgling about the price; but for a  
 ' coward to scruple paying for being made a general,  
 ' or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more  
 ' unreasonable; and I will not hear another word a-  
 ' bout it.'——But what have you done about those  
 ' titles, which I gave you to dispose of?'——' Really  
 ' I do not know what to say to your *Grace* about  
 ' them: the bent of the people does not seem to in-  
 ' cline to honours of late.'——' No! I thought  
 ' they were always as good as ready money; espe-  
 ' cially with those who have more money than sense,  
 ' and think it easier to buy, than earn honour by  
 ' merit. An *IRISH* title was the constant refuge of  
 ' those sons of fortune, who, not being born in the  
 ' rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their  
 ' villanies, were desirous of changing their names.

for



‘ for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, under a heap of honours, which in reality only make them the more exposed to the view, and consequently to the censure of the world.——But I find, even that imaginary sense of honour is gone out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request than the substance, at present. But since they are grown such a drug, even make the most you can of them: sell them to whoever will buy; I shall make no exceptions of persons.’

‘ I shall certainly do the best I can for your Grace, though they have been so oddly given away of late, that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but titles to old men, to divert them; to some, in reward for not doing *the very worst* possibly in their power; and to others, for doing *nothing at all*.——But pray, has your Grace seen the old colonel yet? he got his commission yesterday; I wish he may mean your Grace fairly.’——  
‘ Why? sure you do not imagine he can have the assurance to think of playing me a trick?’——‘ I do not positively say so: but his behaviour has been very mysterious.’

Just then, a servant let her Grace know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, desired leave to wait upon her. ‘ I thought so, (said she) shew him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle with me!’

---

## CH A P. VIII.

*The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.*

**T**HE Colonel advanced to her Grace with the assurance

affurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye; though sharpened by a cast of indignation. 'I come, (said he) please your Grace, to return you my thanks for your favours: I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his Majesty's hand upon it; and as your recommendation was more effectual to procure me this reward, than the labours of a life, which has not been undistinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your Grace this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand, in return.'—'Colonel (replied her Grace) I am glad that it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any *such* return.'—'I am much obliged to your Grace for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope I shall never forfeit. I thank God, my character will not disgrace your recommendation; nor shall you ever have reason to blush at the mention of my name. I have the honour to be your Grace's most humble servant.'

But Colonel (said the gentleman, the agent, who stood by) though her Grace has no occasion for *such* a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature, which you should not forget, especially as you promised it too.'—'Why look you, sir, (replied the colonel) as to that matter, it is most certain that I did something like promise some *such* thing, but when I have told the whole affair so honestly to her Grace, I am sure she will be above demanding it.'—'Sir, (said her grace), I do not desire to hear any thing more about it? and I must tell you that you have behaved like an old knave.'—'Say an old soldier rather, madam, (replied he with some warmth) the other is a term I am not used to.'—'A nice distinction truly, and well worthy of a man of honour' (said the agent with a sneer)'—'Have a care, Sir,

' guard your expressions; my respect, my obligations to her Grace will make me bear any thing from her, but I must be so free as to tell you, that I have not the same sentiments for you.'—'What, are you going to make a riot in my apartments?'—'Not in the least, madam; my respect for your Grace is a sufficient security from that; I would only hint it to *that* gentleman, that he may not always have the protection of your Grace's presence; that is all, madam.'—'You are a knavish old ruffian. But I shall take care that you do not come off so.'—'As your Grace pleases for that. By the laws of my country I cannot lose my commission while I do my duty, nor will my gracious master be influenced to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater affairs, my services, my hardships could not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the imputation of any crime, much less, so black ones as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must give me leave to set this affair in a just light to your Grace now, especially as I may never have an opportunity of doing myself that justice.

' Enraged almost to desperation to find that thirty years service, the merits of which were often written in my blood, and stand recorded in these scars, were not sufficient to procure me the regular advances of my rank, without a merit of another nature, I resolved to quit the barren paths which I had so long pursued in vain, and try those methods which I saw practised with success by others; I therefore applied myself to your Grace, who seemed struck with my hardships, and promised me your favour: referring me, for more particular information, to this gentleman, who would have lowered my sense of your goodness, by loading it with terms, which were not in my power to fulfil.

' Had your Grace mentioned them to me yourself, I should most certainly have owned my inability;

but



\* But coming from him, I looked upon them as the  
 \* *finesse* of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable  
 \* to return with a *feint* of mine; and therefore I  
 \* gave an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal,  
 \* for he dares not say I made a particular or positive  
 \* promise of any thing.

\* If I have done wrong in this, I am mistaken, and  
 \* sorry for it, but still it is not within the article of  
 \* war, that makes an error in judgment criminal,  
 \* because it was not against an enemy; but by all the  
 \* rules of war, and that is my profession, and the only  
 \* one that I have studied, it is allowable to oppose art  
 \* to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons.  
 \* This is what I have done; and the success of this  
 \* stratagem, which has effected by a *coup de main*  
 \* what I had been making regular advances to, so  
 \* long in vain, proves the justness of my plan, and  
 \* must extort your Grace's approbation, when the  
 \* passion raised by this gentleman's mercenary influ-  
 \* ence shall cool.

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph,  
 leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each o-  
 ther in the strongest surprise.

Her Grace found utterance first, and having no o-  
 ther object of her rage, turned all its violence upon  
 her agent. 'So then (said she) after all, I find the old  
 \* ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promise,  
 \* or no promise at all, it seems, for you did not dare  
 \* to contradict him. I thought, sir, that I had cau-  
 \* tioned you before, against this very thing, and given  
 \* you positive orders to take nothing but the money.  
 \* But you shall pay for your neglect! you shall make  
 \* good the loss to me. As for the old ruffian, I will  
 \* speak to his general, and have him broke for a  
 \* cheat. Talk to me of his services! what are his  
 \* services to me? but I will have him broke; his  
 \* example shall terrify others from attempting to ab-  
 \* use me so again.'

\* I wish

' I wish it were proper or possible (replied her agent, as soon as want of breath made her stop) for your Grace to have him punished for his insolence; but such a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once set a-going; for you see he is not to be overawed to any thing. As for his commission, there is no loss in it; for it was ordered for him before I applied, though I made him think it was obtained by your interest, to try what I could bring him to. Your Grace may be assured, that I would not have taken any promise, had it been otherwise; and I was just going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me.'—' It may be so, (returned she); but I shall be better satisfied of it, before I give up your making good the loss.'

The agent was relieved from farther persecution for that time, by the entrance of a messenger, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her Grace had any commands for her friends there. ' None but my good wishes and prayers for their deliverance, (replied she, with a deep drawn sigh), which are constantly offered up for them. I am sorry I am not able to send them any relief from myself; but I have nothing in my power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing. These few pieces (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the Bishop's change of her note) are all at present in my possession; give them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will send her the clothes she wrote for as soon as possible; and assure the rest of my friends of my constant attention to their interest.'

## C H A P. IX.

*CHRYSA* changes his service, for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble invitation of high life. Another change brings *CHRYSA* into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.

**I** WAS, by this time, so sick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number her Grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme, that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world in the light of a state criminal, and get his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the secret intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the public news-papers, which his great friend was to forward to some great person in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office; but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that  
his



his scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs alarming the resentment of the people, and making it evident that the secrets of the nation were betrayed; this insignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking, to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far, that he had like to have overacted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a just judgment on the base depravity of soul, that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious burthensome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable, that he was guilty of more than he was at first even suspected of. This justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim, to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said; but this was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he showed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in *England*; to see the event of this affair, but having learned it since my return, I thought

thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money she had given him to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean domestic duty as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her about settling a party at her house for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they sat in being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be overheard by every one who should come in; and there, over a comfortable glass of *right Holland's*, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her house at the expence of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game of cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by such a set;

set; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper next morning for wine and brandy for the occasion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart. He had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel taverns in the town; but, not content with this public insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and, while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his house, was chanting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit for the wickedness of the times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shows instances as gross as this, the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander to such an house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money sufficient to set up this house for himself, when his character immediately brought him into business, that, in a little time, made his fortune; but for this success, he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed, in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner like a public saint, as soon as he thus rose above the drudgery of business, and from porter became master of the tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers,



reformers, who went preaching up and down the town; at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who, observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practise the vices which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice: but the habit has taken such hold of him, that he cannot desist; and he now does, from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon his character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion generally received among men, that they can change their course of life whenever they please; and as soon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, the high-priest of the conventicle called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the increase of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practise the art, even upon each other), he told him, that he had a most particular occasion for his most private room this evening, 'For, (said he, shaking him by the hand), my friend, as I have found by experience that the only way to foil the devil is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* the ballad-singer, whose attack upon me has made such a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glass of wine.'—'In truth (answered my master, a good deal surpris'd) your reverence's meekness and pa-

“ tience must needs be very great, or you could not  
“ bear ever to mention him in any degree of Christian  
“ charity and benevolence, after so outrageous and  
“ gross an attack as he has made upon you, without  
“ the least personal provocation: for what was it to  
“ him what you said or did to the rest of the world?  
“ his morals or religion were in no danger. But you  
“ were born to be an example of the age, and a shin-  
“ ing light to guide the steps of the faithful.”

“ A truce with this canting now, my friend (re-  
“ plied the Doctor), and let us talk a few words, like  
“ men of the world. Your proved fidelity and pru-  
“ dence making me not scruple to reveal the whole  
“ mystery of the ministry to you, I will let you into  
“ the secret of this affair. You must know then, that  
“ I have, for some time, perceived the humour of the  
“ people begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of  
“ their devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do  
“ to keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and  
“ lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and the  
“ wonderful effects of my spiritual labours. It was  
“ necessary, therefore, to have recourse to some new  
“ expedient to prevent their falling off entirely, and  
“ accordingly I pitched upon this, which has ex-  
“ ceeded my expectations; for instead of making my  
“ people ashamed of coming to me, it has piqued  
“ their pride, and now they resolve to show, that  
“ they scorn as much to be laughed as preached out  
“ of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of  
“ the world, which, since we cannot in reality mend,  
“ we must only strive to make the best of. If I  
“ could carry on my business without this assistance,  
“ I most certainly would never have entered into such  
“ a confederacy, any more than you would keep a  
“ brothel and entertain whores and rogues, if you  
“ could make equal profit by any other company.”

“ I am much obliged to your reverence (returned  
“ my master), for putting me in any degree of com-  
“ parison

' parison with yourself; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low sphere; but still I have the  
 ' pleasure to think, that, even in my poor way, I contribute something towards your great work, as  
 ' there could not be so many converts to resort to you for spiritual comfort, if there were no places of  
 ' this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You see, Sir, that I enter into the spirit of your design,  
 ' and deserve your confidence by this return of mine.  
 ' There are secrets in all professions; and, as you have entered into a league with your professed enemy,  
 ' that you may be able to play into each other's hands, so I, notwithstanding the probity of my professions,  
 ' have a private understanding with all the ladies of pleasure who resort to this house, who, in  
 ' return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence, and countenance  
 ' every imposition of false measures, false charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent man  
 ' turns the folly of the world to his own advantage.  
 ' As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-singer, I own I never suspected the least of it; and  
 ' indeed I still am at a loss to think how you could bear the personal reflections especially which he  
 ' has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he should call you  
 ' Doctor *Hunch-back*?—Why that is true enough (answered the Doctor); in that he exceeded my  
 ' directions; and to call him to an account for it, is part of the business of this appointment. Every  
 ' thing else was settled between us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs. *Brimstone's*, who first  
 ' negotiated the affair between us, and consented to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the common cause.  
 ' She will be here to-night too, so that we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I hear  
 ' him just come in. I directed him to inquire for



‘ number one; do you show him into the private  
‘ room, and when the coast is clear I’ll join you.’

## CHAP. X.

*CHRYSALE’S master starts at his own apparition. In-  
terview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-singer.  
The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike.*

**T**HE person my master was sent to meet, had something so uncommon in his appearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his every look and gesture turned some vice or folly into ridicule. ‘ You inquire for number one, Sir,’ (said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect).— ‘ I do, Sir (answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair) inquire for number one.’

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expence of others, this personal application of them to himself threw him into such confusion, that in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush feebly broke through his unimpassioned lifeless face, and he had scarce power to show him into the room. The ballad-singer, seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, ‘ I am come, my friend and brother in  
‘ the Lord (said he), to inquire into thy spiritual  
‘ estate, to give thee ghostly advice, and commune  
‘ with thee for a short space for our mutual edifica-  
‘ tion.’

tion.—The surprise and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter, and he immediately recovered from the confusion into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated when the Doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, ‘I am glad to see you, Sir (said he, taking him by the hand), and heartily congratulate you on your success: you see I was not mistaken in my judgment. I knew what would take with the taste of the public. There is nothing pleases them so much as a little profaneness and ridicule of religion: a sting at the clergy never fails to raise a laugh.’—‘I acknowledge your judgment, Sir (answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor’s voice), and thank you for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least sting at the clergy, nor been guilty of profaneness or ridiculing religion in my ballad; the abuse of religion by hypocrisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanction for the practice of vice, were the objects of my satire; and the reception it has met with from the public, shows that the people have a proper sense of such vices.’

The Doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself when the other began to speak, that he started in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finished his discourse, which else he certainly would have done, while my master stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-singer turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, ‘And you, Sir (continued he, addressing himself to him), must have had ample experience, in the

“course of your business, that the taste of the town  
 “inclines quite another way, the most profligate in  
 “practice being the most pious in profession.”

This sudden transition from the Doctor, restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the Doctor could speak, “However I  
 “may doubt your opinion (said he to the ballad-  
 “finger), I acknowledge the irresistible force of  
 “your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of  
 “them for a moment, till we talk of business. I will  
 “not dispute about the cause of your success, but I  
 “think you need not have fallen upon my person.  
 “My professions and practice surely were enough,  
 “with your own exaggerations. Why then need  
 “you give me the opprobrious nickname of *Hunch-  
 “back*, which has spread so that I shall never get rid  
 “of it? The very children haunt me with it as I go  
 “along the street.”

“Good Heavens (answered the other) how subject  
 “are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I  
 “should have thought that you were long since proof  
 “to any thing the world could say of you, or you  
 “would have given up your trade before now. As  
 “to my calling you this name, you must know, that  
 “the whole success of our scheme depended upon it;  
 “for if I had not turned the ridicule against your  
 “person, the taste of the public is so gross, that I  
 “might have laughed alone at your opinions. But  
 “what success have you had? Do you find your  
 “flock gather upon this attack on their shepherd?—  
 “Why pretty well (replied the Doctor) pretty well.  
 “They seem to shew a proper sense of it. As for  
 “me, I appear affected at it, in a very extraordinary  
 “manner, that is, solely upon your account; and to  
 “convince them and all the world of the strength of  
 “my



my charity, I design to-morrow to offer up prayers  
 for your conversion, as being in a dangerous state  
 of salvation, and then, on the merit of that, to pro-  
 pose a subscription, for the relief of two or three  
 families, whom your example has led into ruin.—  
 Bravo, Doctor! (interrupted the other) tell me of  
 profaneness again! But I hope I am to have a share  
 in the subscription, as it is to be proposed on my  
 account; at least, you will let me assist in the dis-  
 tribution of it.— Take care, my friend! (re-  
 turned the Doctor) another word of that kind, and  
 I declare off the connection. I will have no body  
 pry into my conduct, or interfere with my busi-  
 ness! I did not ask any part of your gains, though  
 you got so much in every company where you sung  
 your ballad; nor did I speak a word in behalf of  
 the other poor ballad-singers, you picked up about  
 the streets, and set to sing for you, though the  
 wretches complained that you starved them.

The ballad-singer perceiving that he had touched  
 upon a tender point, thought proper to wave it, as  
 he did not choose to break off so advantageous a con-  
 nection. As to that (said he), I did but jest: I  
 never interfere with any man's matters. But  
 that's true! I have bad news to tell you! *The clerk*  
*of the parish* sent me word yesterday, that under-  
 standing I sung my ballad to a psalm tune, he let  
 me know that I must change my note directly, or  
 he would order the beadle to whip me out of the  
 parish, if I ever presumed to sing there again; and,  
 to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me  
 to make use of an old black-guard tune which he  
 sent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the  
 edge of the ridicule, which was never turned a-  
 gainst the tune itself, but solely against the pro-  
 fstitution of it; which can never be so effectually  
 attacked, as by repeating the manner, exactly, in  
 which

‘ which it is sung. But where is our friend *Brimstone*? I expected to have met her here.’

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, supported by two chairmen, who enquiring, in a feeble voice, for number *one*, he directly shewed her into the company.

## CH A P. XI.

*A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. MOMUS plays successively upon Doctor HUNCH-BACK, and Mother BRIMSTONE. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.*

THE Matron, whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures, which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almost concealed a piece of greasy flannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, flowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, swollen out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannels.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and stooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton her supporter, was so strikingly ridiculous, that the moment they appeared,

ed, *Momus* burst into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him such a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart); 'Behold (said he) the blessed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice! See how the spirit assisteth the flesh, to struggle with the infirmities of nature.'—And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother, (addressing himself to her) give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me. Come! Let me help you into that great chair!—' Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones! (exclaimed she) how you pull me along: you will tear me to pieces! oh! oh! oh!—' Never fear, mother! never fear that! (answered he); Crazy as your carcase is, it will stick a little longer together; your friends are not ready for you yet.'—' Go! go! you are a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'—' Dear Doctor, I thought I should never see you more! I had a sad night of it; a most sad one indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh, if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the sober bottle we cracked together, raised my spirits so, that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way. —This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions, came in upon me, just as you went out at the back door. Well, to be sure they have a great deal to answer for! I was just beginning to read the pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, snatched the book out of my hand, and calling for the Ladies, insisted upon my sitting with them; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not refuse: but, alas! I

paid



' paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones!   
 ' and then my head! my poor head is quite gone,   
 ' quite gone! I can bear nothing.—Oh what a dif-   
 ' ference there is between spending an evening in   
 ' edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a   
 ' pious friend or two, and these ranting riotous   
 ' scenes! though they behaved so like gentlemen,   
 ' and were so good company, that there was no leav-   
 ' ing them. But it is all folly! all vanity! I am   
 ' resolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it   
 ' much longer, I am resolved! I'll wean myself   
 ' from this world, and think of nothing but a new   
 ' life.—I hope the baronet won't use poor *Betsy*   
 ' ill! I did not like his refusing to taste the ratifia!   
 ' I should be ruined if any thing ailed her; she is   
 ' more enquired for than all the Ladies in the house.   
 ' —And my Lord! He is sweet company. But   
 ' it is a pity he is so wicked! He was going to burn   
 ' my book of devout exercises; and then, that pro-   
 ' fane song of yours! what need he sing that! I   
 ' wonder what pleasure people can find in profane-   
 ' ness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another   
 ' thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness   
 ' sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous   
 ' fine gentleman! He gave *Poll* ten guineas this   
 ' morning: He's very fond of *Poll*; he always has   
 ' her when *Betsy* is engaged! Oh! oh! shall I ever   
 ' get rid of these pains! when shall I be happy in   
 ' heaven?

While she was running on thus, the Doctor was   
 busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a fami-   
 ly in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a sub-   
 scription, the next day, from his congregation; and   
 my master was laying glasses on the table, and draw-   
 ing the corks out of several bottles, so that *Momus*   
 alone attended to her; by the significant archness   
 of whose look, it was easy to perceive, that he was   
 laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would

not

not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse never so long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

‘ I am sorry, my friend, (said he, addressing himself to her) to hear you complain so; I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night; but I much fear, that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth when he is full of wine: A little is good and rejoiceth the heart, but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth loose the secrets of the wife.’  
— As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since the blessed hour of my *call*, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter; I never mentioned a word of it. — But, Doctor, what did you do with the young lady, whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head: She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of business, therefore her *call* need not come this great while; it will be time enough some years hence: I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. No body knows the trouble and expence I am at, for the service of the public! No body knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common servant maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them; Ladies of birth and education! and yet I am not regarded! no body thanks me: This is poor encouragement, to serve the public, very poor indeed! But virtue is its own reward! That's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault:

‘ fault: Let the world answer for it; I do my part, and so my mind is at ease.’

‘ That you do! (said *Momus*, while she stopped to drink) that you do! Your diligence never slackens! Come, fill your glass. Here’s to the reformation of manners, a work that we all labour in alike.’——

‘ By your leave, good Sir, (interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone of offended importance) not all alike, I presume! I believe you will allow, that there is some difference between your profession and mine, at least.’——‘ So then (answered *Momus*) you are returning to the old point! I thought I had said enough to you on that head before! Difference! aye! that there is indeed; but perhaps you are not sensible, in whose favour that difference is! I sing a song that makes people laugh, and put vice and folly out of countenance, by shewing them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a trifling pittance of that money which they devote to mere pleasure; but you, by drawing horrors that never existed out of your own imagination, and preaching up doctrines impossible to practise, frighten your poor deluded followers out of every enjoyment of their lives, and pillage them of the money, that should support their families, and pay their debts, under the pretence of imaginary charities!—— This is the very difference between us.’——‘ Good lack! good lack! (interrupted the sage Matron) how can people be such fools, as to fall out thus about nothing! What signifies it where the difference lies, so you can both do your business? It is just the same thing, as if my landlord here, and I, should enter into a dispute, about the reputation of our houses. I thought I had made you both promise never to mention this matter any more! Come, Doctor! here is prosperity to all our business, without any such foolish distinctions.’——

The



The judgment of this mediation was too plain to admit of any dispute. The competitors filled their glasses, and, shaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toast. 'Well, now, there is some pleasure in this, (continued she); things are like to go on well when all parties agree; but when some people fall out—you know the rest of the saying. —But, my friend *Momus*, I have news for you. That story of the young Lady that you put in your ballad, has answered just as I said. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better. I never had a greater run of company in my life, than to inquire into that affair; and they all of the right sort, your secret, grave, old, rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first, I always deny it, with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such a scandalous story; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I seem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, so far as to my having the Lady in my power; and then the consequence is, that they all intreat me to let them see her, (that is, singly, for such chaps always come alone); when such is the pleasure of debauching virtue, that, besides making me an handsome present for my kindness, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a genteel settlement; by which means, I have got a pretty sum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do any thing in the public way; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters, even to mix in company that might undeceive them. So you see, Doctor, that I do not forget your instructions, of doing all the good in my power; and sure it is no

VOL. II. F small

' small matter to rescue so many poor women, who  
 ' were no longer capable of getting a genteel liveli-  
 ' hood for themselves, from want and misery, and  
 ' getting them a comfortable settlement for life; so  
 ' that they have nothing to do now, but attend to  
 ' you, and make their peace with Heaven.—Come,  
 ' here's my service to you, my friend *Momus*; and  
 ' if you can think of any story of me that can serve  
 ' your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare  
 ' me; I'll forgive you.'—' And so will I too, (added  
 ' the Doctor), though he should call me a worse name  
 ' than *Hunch-back*. Let them laugh who win. While  
 ' our railing at each other in public answers our own  
 ' ends, we are fools to drop it: as to the deceit in it,  
 ' it is a virtue; for sure it is better to live thus in  
 ' friendship and charity with all mankind, than to be  
 ' the real enemies we seem; and so, Sir, here's my  
 ' hearty service to you: and let us pursue our works  
 ' in concert, without any more of these broils. So  
 ' let us drink about for an hour or two; for I must  
 ' leave you early, being obliged to write an exhorta-  
 ' tion for the old Dutchess, which I must carry her  
 ' early in the morning, when she designs to visit her  
 ' cousin the Colonel, who is under sentence of death  
 ' in Newgate for murder; not that I think either  
 ' that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon  
 ' him: but she will try, and I do not care to disob-  
 ' lige her, as she is not only a good subscriber upon  
 ' all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle,  
 ' which would never have risen into such esteem with  
 ' the people, if some persons of quality had not  
 ' brought it into fashion.'—' Why, aye, to be sure  
 ' there is a great deal in that, (added the Matron);  
 ' fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that,  
 ' I could never do the business I do. But since the  
 ' nobility have made it the fashion to marry their  
 ' mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bringing  
 ' a private gentleman's daughter into our way of  
 ' life,

' life, as it gives her the only chance she can possibly,  
 ' have of making her fortune, and becoming a Lady ;  
 ' for, as to the example of those few who married  
 ' Ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old-fashi-  
 ' oned and romantic, to have any influence. But that's  
 ' true, Doctor, I forgot to mention something to you.  
 ' last night, that has given me great concern. How  
 ' could you be so indiscreet, as to accompany that  
 ' highwayman to Tyburn the other day, and then  
 ' to take his hand, and kiss it before all the people ?  
 ' Fie ! it turns my stomach to think of it. I do not  
 ' know how you can expect any Lady will let you ever  
 ' kiss her lips after such a filthy action. Besides, it is  
 ' a scandal to all your congregation, that you should  
 ' appear so familiar with such low-liv'd creatures,  
 ' and seems a kind of encouragement to their crimes.  
 ' If you had heard what remarks two or three Ladies,  
 ' who called at my house yesterday evening, made  
 ' upon it; I am sure you would never do it again.'—  
 ' Go to, woman ! go to ! (answered the Doctor,  
 ' with a contemptuous look), take the beam out of  
 ' thine own eye, before you find fault with the mote  
 ' in your neighbour's. What highwayman's crimes  
 ' are equal to yours ? The greatest danger of scandal  
 ' that ever I ran, has been in condescending to keep  
 ' company with you. In that indeed I may be said,  
 ' with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage  
 ' the basest crimes.'—

The Matron, who, with all her prudence, was of a  
 warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this,  
 even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her  
 glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived  
 her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head  
 with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim,  
 that it felled him to the ground.—' Woman !' (sput-  
 tered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to ar-  
 ticulate a word), ' Woman ! Call your women about  
 ' you ! I scorn your words, you canting, hypocri-



' tical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance  
 ' of sanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools  
 ' that mind you. You condescend to keep me com-  
 ' pany! you! a creature who would never have been  
 ' taken notice of, had it not been for me! Did I  
 ' not point you out the persons proper for you to  
 ' work upon? Was it not I that introduced you to  
 ' those very people of quality that now make you  
 ' give yourself such airs? Were they not most of  
 ' them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me  
 ' for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know  
 ' yourself, you scoundrel: I will. I'll expose you  
 ' to the world, and then see who will go to your  
 ' conventicle, or subscribe to your sham charities.  
 ' I'll make you know how to treat your superiors for  
 ' the future.' —

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury,  
*Momus* and my master raised the Doctor from the  
 ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass  
 had been thrown with such strength, that, had not his  
 skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours  
 would have been at an end; however, it had made  
 such a gash on his temple, that he was in a moment  
 in a gore of blood. The sight of this terrified them  
 all. The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint)  
 away; my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the  
 blood, while *Momus* supported the Doctor in his  
 chair; but the first sight of the wound convincing  
 him that it was not dangerous, he resolved to im-  
 prove the accident to that diversion which was the  
 great pursuit of his life.

' Good Heaven!' (said he in a low voice, as if  
 speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of  
 distress), ' What will become of us all? We shall all  
 ' be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even if we  
 ' escape the death which inevitably awaits the  
 ' wretched Murderers.' — ' O Sir! (said the Doctor,  
 ' alarmed almost to despair), what do you think?

' Am.

'Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure you, give  
 'me some hopes!'—'Alas, my friend! I wish I  
 'could; but I must not flatter a man in your condi-  
 'tion. If you have any concerns in this life to set-  
 'tle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in  
 'your skull threatens immediate death. Heavens!  
 '(stooping, and pretending to look earnestly), how  
 'his brain works!'—'O what shall I do! (exclaim-  
 'ed the terrified wretch), I cannot die! I am not  
 'fit to die! Oh! that I had followed some honest  
 'trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I  
 'might then have earned honest bread, as my fore-  
 'fathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and  
 'the more horrid fate that awaits me! What shall  
 'I do? What will become of me? How can I  
 'pray even to that God whom I have so often pro-  
 'voked by my hypocrisy and crimes!'—

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound,  
 and seeing, though it bled so violently, from the num-  
 ber of little vessels that are in that part, there was  
 no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it,  
 'Be comforted, Sir, (said he), you have time enough  
 'to prepare yourself for death. I'll insure you from  
 'any danger this time.'—'How, my dearest, best  
 'friend,' (said the Doctor, catching his hand, and  
 kissing it in ecstasy), 'Is my life safe? Is not the wound  
 'mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even dangerous, if  
 'the surgeons do not make it so. Give me leave to  
 'put a plaster to it, which I always have in readiness  
 'in the house, in case of accidents, as gentlemen of-  
 'ten quarrel for their women in their liquor; and  
 'I'll engage that it shall give you no farther trouble.  
 'Many a guinea have I got by it; for, when any such  
 'thing happens, I immediately slip on a full-trimm'd  
 'suit, a big wig, and a sword, which a surgeon once  
 'pawnd to me for a debt of two guineas, and up I  
 'go, do the job, take the fee, and come away as

‘ good a surgeon as the best : never fear, Sir, I’ll  
 ‘ insure you from this scratch.’

The consolation which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expressed. He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But *Momus*, who saw his sport with the Doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself; for, taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose, in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This instantly awoke her from her swoon. She shrieked out, when he, in the same affected confusion, flung the basin of bloody water, in which the Doctor’s wound had been washed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable as that of my master or the Doctor; the consequence of which was, that the Doctor could not refrain from bursting out a laughing. ‘ Well my friend, said  
 ‘ he, (taking her by the hand), it is but just, that  
 ‘ you should share in the effects of your own rashness.  
 ‘ But let there be no more of it. We have both  
 ‘ been in fault perhaps; and so let us only be more  
 ‘ cautious for the future. What I have suffered was  
 ‘ done by design, and had like to have been attended  
 ‘ with dreadful consequences; yours is all accidental  
 ‘ and trifling.’ —

While the Doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself, and setting the room to rights. *Momus* assisted the Matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with; which he performed with so well-acted an anxiety and care, that even she was deceived,



ceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confusion; and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of *Momus's* gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character by each of the company; of which *Momus's* was the most humorous, my master's the grossest, the Matron's the loosest, and the Doctor's the most daringly profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this the company broke up, when the Doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

---

## CHAP. XII.

*The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character.*

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the *Exhortation* which

which he was to carry to her *Grace* the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself: his time was too precious to be employed so: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other; as visiting his great profelytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burden, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily: but still, to secure to himself every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went upon the present occasion; and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politics to a company of chairmen, he told him his business, and desired him to set about it directly. 'Good good Sir (said the author), this is a very unseasonable time to set me upon such a work. From five this morning till eleven at night have I laboured incessantly; and now when I have just stepped out to take a little necessary refreshment'—'Refreshment! (answered my master); tell me not of refreshment, or any thing else: Either do my business, or say you will not. I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you.'—'That is impossible (replied the author) if they are to live by it. I am sure what you give me, scarce keeps me from starving.'—'Starving! (returned my master); so it appears indeed, when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and smell so strong of spirituous liquors, that

' that it is offensive to sobriety to stand near you. I  
 ' wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of such  
 ' intemperance: it ill becomes a man of morality  
 ' and religion.'—' Sir, Sir (interrupted the author,  
 ' provoked beyond his patience), have some regard  
 ' to truth and reason in what you say; and look at  
 ' home before you accuse me of intemperance. I la-  
 ' boured the whole day without any other refresh-  
 ' ment or sustenance than a mouthful of bread and  
 ' cheese, and a draught of small-beer; and now have  
 ' had only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm por-  
 ' ter, to wash down half a pound of sausages; and  
 ' you call this intemperance. If I may judge by  
 ' appearances, you have not spent your evening on  
 ' such fare.'—' How I have spent my evening (re-  
 ' turned my master, who in spite of himself felt the  
 ' justice of the reproach) is nothing to the purpose:  
 ' I am answerable for what I do. But this manner  
 ' of talking signifies nothing; I must have this *Ex-*  
 ' *hortation* by eight in the morning; it will not take  
 ' you up much time. You are sufficiently practised  
 ' in the style; the matter is of little consequence. If  
 ' you choose to drink a glass of wine, here is half a  
 ' crown, which I make you a present of. I would  
 ' by no means have you stinted of any thing that is  
 ' proper.'—' Sir (answered the author), I am much  
 ' obliged to you; I will take care that it shall be  
 ' ready at the time. You are sensible that I never  
 ' think much of any labour to serve you. I have  
 ' finished all the pamphlets you ordered about the  
 ' ballad singer's affair. Here they are. This is a  
 ' letter from you to him, that lays him flat; I have  
 ' quoted half the fathers of the church against him.  
 ' These two are letters to you upon the subject, one  
 ' as from a great lord, the other from a reverend di-  
 ' vine, setting forth the great benefits of your minis-  
 ' try, and exposing the profaneness and immorality  
 ' of his ballad. This here is a silly vindication of  
 ' his



his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and this last is an address to the public against all those irreligious and profane amusements of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-piece. You see it is as from myself, if you do not choose to own it; though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies, if it appears as from another. So you see I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr. *Momus* and his ballad.—‘Why aye! pretty well, I believe (said my master): But hold, I have a thought just come into my head.—You must know that the parson of the parish has sent for that reprobate, that *Momus*, and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have several of the same notes with the psalm-tunes. Now as this is known, what do you think of writing a letter to me, as from the parson, setting forth what he has done, and insinuating that it was by the direction of the squire?—this will clinch the affair. After such an authority, no one will dare to say a word in its behalf: Beside, it will have a good look to be taken notice of by such people.’—‘That is true (answered the author); it will so; and the parson’s notice shall not be thrown away. I’ll do it to-morrow morning, as soon as I send you the *Exhortation*.’—My master then wished him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himself went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch, when he was called to chant his matin song; after which he did not fail to display the wound in his temple, the occasion of which he promised to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole flock, to hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription,

tion, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up) dressed and waiting for him: 'Please your Grace (said he), here is the *Exhortation* your Grace desired of me; and I pray Heaven it may prove successful. I am afraid I have made your Grace wait, but I came the moment I had finished the first duties of the morning. If your Grace pleases, I will do myself the honour to accompany your Grace. Perhaps my personal *Exhortation* and prayer may have more effect. My ministry has often been blessed with astonishing success.'—'I am sensible of that, Doctor (answered her Grace); but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that I apprehend he might be guilty of some act of rashness that might be dangerous to your person, if you were to go to him without his consent; and that, I am much afraid, I shall hardly obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; and when I expostulated with him on the danger of trifling away his few remaining moments in so idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating him, if I spoke with greater severity), he only smiled, and answered me with a passage out of some play.'—'Yes, please your Grace (replied my master, with a lifted eye and deep-fetched groan), cards and plays are the bane of half the world: religion is quite neglected for them. The great work of reformation will never be completed, till they are utterly abolished. As your Grace does not think it meet that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman in person, I am obedient to your  
' Grace's

‘ Grace’s pleasure ; however, I will offer up my  
 ‘ prayers for him ; and my spirit shall assist your  
 ‘ pious endeavours. Not that I fear what man can  
 ‘ do unto me : the angel of the Lord watcheth over  
 ‘ me, or the stroke that made this wound had given  
 ‘ me rest from my labours.’

He then displayed the mark of mother *Brimstone*’s  
 rage, and told her Grace so moving and circumstan-  
 tial a story of his having been way-laid, and attacked  
 by some of *Momus*’s riotous companions, that she im-  
 plicitly believed him, and sympathized in his suffer-  
 ings. He then gave her the *Exhortation*, which she  
 was to deliver to her unfortunate cousin ; and seeing  
 her uneasy at being obliged to wait till the bank  
 should be open, to get money to distribute among  
 the poor wretches in the prison, he accommodated  
 her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, hav-  
 ing (as he told her Grace) just so much about him,  
 which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious  
 family, in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me, that I changed my  
 service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of  
 my master ; though from a view I took of his heart,  
 I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery  
 of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to  
 her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for  
 the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fel-  
 low-prisoners, while she waited for his rising, which  
 was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole  
 night before, at his beloved diversion of card-play-  
 ing. When at length she got admittance to him, her  
 reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she  
 had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He  
 asked her if she had procured him a pardon ? and  
 when she answered in the negative, and assured him  
 that all such hopes were vain, he then told her, that  
 he would dispense with the continuation of her visits,  
 and



and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exhortation* of my late master, which she with difficulty persuaded him to take, though, from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress, for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession, was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer, for the conversion of him, and every other object of the divine displeasure; for though a misguided fervency of devotion had made her, in some measure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her sex and rank.

---

### C H A P. XIII.

*History of a Lady of fashion. Description of a rout.*

*CHRYSAE changes his service for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for a husband.*

**S**HE accordingly went that afternoon to the house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations, to spend the evening, at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had sacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the

nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniences he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned; and the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it, in as high a manner, as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was too late to remedy it: he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion for vain pomp and expensive ceremony, under the parade of which she strives to hide her obscure original, as she attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue, by a most rigid profession of religion. Thus, her routs are the most splendid, and difficult of access, of any in the town, no person being invited but those of the first rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and she professes herself a strict follower of my late master in his most extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impossible to convey any notion to you, of such a scene as this, to which my mistress carried me, it is so different from that sphere in which you have acted. Suppose you see several hundred people of both sexes, and of every age, dressed in all the profusion and elegance of expence, and wearing dissipation and happiness in their looks, assembled together, to spend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverse, and you shall behold a set of people who have sacrificed their real interest and the peace of their minds, to the

the gratification of this, and such like pleasures, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly the whole is one continued scene of sharpening, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few, who, like my mistress, came there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit, in seeming acquiescence, to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short, I shall wave giving any account of them, (especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest, who launch out of the common road of life, are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment) and hasten to the lady, in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who, in the decline of life, had overlooked the disparity of age and rank, and married her solely to gratify his passion for beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds; but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her, placed her upon a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.



She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put in execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank in the company, the weakness of whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person, to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye, with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind, that if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal! She revoked! She missed reckoning her honours! In short she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent headach, and leave the company. As soon as she got home, she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects, for accomplishing her design; but still, the account which the old lady had given, of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted, disconcerted them all. At length, she resolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design, before she had some prospect of success,

cess, she resolved to sound the person, before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a person had a certain affair to propose to him, for his concurrence, in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beside several other considerable advantages: and that what he was desired to do could be effected, without any possible loss, or danger to himself. This letter she sent by the penny-post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person in whom she confided.

Such a letter necessarily surprised the gentleman to whom it was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villany was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly he answered the letter directly, in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied, that the person who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took, as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object, to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman, by his assistance, enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him in the agency of the estate, or rather indeed of sharing it with him, and desiring to meet him that evening, either at her house, or any other place he

pleased, to confer upon proper means, for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act on such an occasion: he immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and showing both the letters, desired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was struck with horror at a piece of villany that did such dishonour to the sex, respect for the memory of the worthy man whose name she bore, would not permit him to expose her to public insult: however, to prevent her making the like attempt elsewhere, he resolved to shock her, by a personal detection; accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be seen going to her house, but that, if she pleased, he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where she should enquire for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a prospect of immediate success, made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her which she never suspected. A little before the time, he went to the tavern with the gentleman, and, fixing upon a room in which there was a closet, large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word, that if any lady should enquire for Mr. *Trueman*, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate showing her up into the room, and placing her so, that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he entered into conversation with her on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and, by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.



As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion struck her motionless and dumb. She was just able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman, to whom she had designed such an injury: he assisted to raise her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her, that he would take no notice of what had happened; if he found that her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and, unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees, and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation, when she got home, was truly pitiable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and, in the agony of her grief, resolved to leave this detested town next morning,  
and

and bury herself for ever from the world in her country seat.

This resolution she held till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the farrier who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country assizes, where the lives of many depended on his good nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who lost me that evening to a nobleman at an horse-race.

---

#### C H A P. XIV.

*CHRYSA L, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.*

**I**N the three or four last changes of my service, there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural, and the events common: but I must own I was a good deal surpris'd at several occurrences in my present station, which were in the present course of things so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimsical.

whimsical devil could never have thought of them without information.

The *gentleman* who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his skill in the mysterious science of *chance*, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune; in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived for several years in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talked of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one resource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to redress the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that company were at the *post* when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a crowd of their own servants, their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-coloured tribe, and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with which those gentry receive them, at the door of a play-house or palace; so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses, when I recognized the faces of several persons of the most elevated stations, and particularly most of those among whom I had spent the evening I described to you at the *club*, on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the *bets* were *made*, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockeys, and came up to the post, just as they were preparing to *start*, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord,' (said he); 'Well, Jack,' (replied the other), 'where have you been all day?'—This was all the discourse



discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment: but on the strength of this, my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their *bets*, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost to a noble duke, who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum besides, more than he was able to pay.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and, addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the *scales*; 'Sblood, my lord, (said he), how could you sling me so? I am quite broken up: his Grace has touched me for 500, and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so *torn* down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him.'—'How could this be, (replied the groom), did I not give you the *word*? but you are such a careless son of a bitch'—'The word with a vengeance, (answered my master); you returned me *well*, but I have found it very ill.'—'Aye, I guessed it was so, (replied the groom); you were ignorant that we were *smoked*, and found it necessary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning? taking a ride I suppose: you will never leave off, till these rides bring you to ride in a cart to Tyburn; but keep out of his Grace's way till the horses start, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his entrance, before we admit him to be *one of us*.'—This discourse passed as they were walking together

together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub* and *settle* next heat.

You are surprised at this familiarity between my master and the groom. When he at first addressed him by the title of *My lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which, in the freedom of this intercourse, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my astonishment at a nearer view, to see that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their servants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors? Strange ambition, at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their assistance.

As soon as the noble groom and my master were alone; ‘Now, Jack, what think you of my little *stun-orse*? (says his lordship). You must know that I have *measured the foot* of them all in this heat, and find, that *I have the heels* by a *distance* at least; but the weights are above my *trim*. However, we have a remedy for that: look at this cap, (taking one out of a chest, in which his running dress had been brought to the ground); this is a *leaden skull*, and weighs above two *stun*; put this on your head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the headach: aye, it fits you very well. Now, I will wear this to the post, and, just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow your’s to ride in; and when I alight at the *scales*, after the heat is over, I will pull off your’s, as if to wipe my face, and give it to you to hold, who can return me this to weigh in; and, as I wear the same trusses, stuffed with handkerchiefs, in which I carried the weight last heat, they

‘ never

‘ never will suspect us.—Ha, Jack, what say you to this? match me this among all your *Hibernian* tricks, if you can. Go your way: double with his Grace, and *lay* all you can, I’ll go with you; but be sure to meet me at the post before, and at the scales after the heat, and not to blow the business, by being in too great a hurry.’

I see you wonder how his lordship could put such confidence in my master, as he seemed to know him so well; but the truth was, my master’s character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried; and this made the other think him the safest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordship.—The finesse succeeded; his lordship *beat every tail hollow*; and my master not only *cleared* with his Grace, but also won considerably for himself and his confederate beside. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair, that the *knowing ones were all taken in*; and, to make the pleasure complete, though the crowd was so great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the *crossing*, by the superior strength of a servant who rode against him, and *slipped* his shoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horse’s falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the by-matches, that I was lost that evening, to the nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new master’s return to London, he went to pay his court



## ADVENTURES of a GUINEA. 85

court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country seats.

---

### C H A P. XV.

*CHRYSAI's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAI comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.*

**S**OME public occasion had brought a concourse, more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the Princee that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late? on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that 'He had been detained by a very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman, (said he), went into company last night, so *immensely* drunk, that, having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the money, till some person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly; on which it was referred to me; and sorry I am, that I was qualified to give it against him.'—'How, my lord, by being a person of honour!' says the gentleman he spoke to.—'No, (replied my master, with a significant smile), not so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning it.'—And then turning short to another, 'But have you heard the news, my lord? (said he): Mr. — caught his wife yesterday taking a seri-

‘ous walk in Kensington Gardens with the gentle-  
 ‘man whom we all know he forbade her keeping  
 ‘company with, some time ago.’—A smile of general  
 approbation encouraged him so much, that he  
 concluded with saying, ‘He wished he had himself  
 ‘been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubted  
 ‘not but the gravest bishop on the bench would,  
 ‘were he to speak his mind honestly.’

The Prince had heard him without interruption;  
 but, as soon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman  
 who stood near him, ‘There can be no greater insult  
 ‘(said he, with a determined look and solemn accent)  
 ‘to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a  
 ‘country in execution, than for any one to boast of a  
 ‘breach of those in his presence. For my part, if I  
 ‘am ever called by Providence to that station, it is  
 ‘my invariable resolution, that no man, how exalted  
 ‘soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any  
 ‘law, human or divine, shall ever hold employment  
 ‘under me, or receive countenance from me.’

This rebuke damped my master’s spirits, as it struck  
 a reverential awe into all present. He hung down  
 his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite a-  
 bashed. But he soon recovered, and to silence the jests  
 of his companions, and shew that he was not to be  
 brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with  
 them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where  
 he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who  
 gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker,  
 who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-  
 keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I  
 was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minis-  
 ter of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human  
 politics, made me enter into this service with re-  
 luctance; but my prejudice was soon removed. My  
 new master was just coming from his closet when I  
 was delivered to him: he stopped to count the money;  
 then

then putting it into his purse, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand,—‘I must have all these finished against morning, (said he) that I may be able to read them over, before they are signed. I know they are a great many, but the business requires dispatch; and diligence and method overcome the greatest difficulties’—Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with several of the most eminent members of the community, who came, some to consult, some to advise, (for he refused not the advice of the meanest) and all to congratulate him on the success of his measures.—When the business and formality of this scene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who desired some private conversation with my master. As soon as they were alone, ‘I have done myself the honour to wait upon you this morning, (said the gentleman) to inform you that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me return; for as I see that all your measures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am resolved to support you.’

‘I am much obliged to you for your good opinion, (answered my master) but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person, by any other means than reason: all therefore that I have to ask is, that you will return an honest man; while he approves of my conduct, he will certainly support me, and no longer do I wish to be supported.’

‘What, Sir! (replied the gentleman in astonishment) not desire to have your friends returned? Why, Sir, is it possible that you can be a stranger to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a mere wreck, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of their master, took the boat, and made



• their escape to shore; and now, when you have not  
• only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted  
• her out for another voyage, with every prospect of  
• success, are caballing to undermine and turn you  
• away from the helm: not that they even pretend  
• to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they  
• may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours.  
• As this, Sir, is notoriously the case, you must  
• excuse the warmth of my honest zeal, when I tell  
• you, that I think you must be guilty of very  
• strange, very blameable remissness, if you neglect  
• any possible method of disappointing their pernicious  
• designs.'

• My friend, (returned my master) I am too sensible  
• of the truth of all you say, but hope there is  
• no necessity of my having recourse to methods  
• which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance  
• of any such, did I (to pursue your mode of speech)  
• first point out to our master, and the rest of the  
• ship's company, the errors in their steering, the  
• rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way  
• to avoid them. Without any such, did I take the  
• helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from  
• the wreck, and work'd her out of the breakers  
• they left her among; and, without any such, will  
• I support my place at the helm, or resign it,  
• for, in my opinion, no end can justify improper  
• means.

• Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer  
• gives me pain? Do not mistake me; I am sincerely  
• obliged to you for that good opinion which dictated  
• it to your honest heart: but the truth is,  
• that any member of the community's having the  
• power of making such an offer, proves such a degeneracy  
• in our constitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end.  
• A parliament should be a representative of the people:  
• but how can it be said to be that, if the people are not at liberty to choose  
• whom

• whom they please to represent them? Besides, such  
 • a manner of *nominating*, disappoints the end, as  
 • well as it destroys the essence of a parliament, as  
 • it is too probable that the nominator shall stipu-  
 • late conditions with *his* member, that may not only  
 • take away his power of voting according to the  
 • dictates of his judgment and conscience, but also  
 • enjoin such as may be directly opposite to both,  
 • and injurious, if not destructive, to that country,  
 • which he thus *nominally* represents. A parliament  
 • therefore, to be *free*, should be *freely* chosen, no man  
 • having it in his power to do more than give his own  
 • vote; and such a parliament, to keep up to the ex-  
 • cellence of its nature in its first institution, should  
 • not continue longer than one session; but a new  
 • one be called as often as the occasions of the state  
 • should require it, once in every year at least, for  
 • so often does the interest of a nation demand, that  
 • its guardians should meet. Such a parliament, sen-  
 • sible of the shortness of its duration, and nature of  
 • the tenure of their power, would take care never  
 • to act against the interest of their constituents; or,  
 • if human frailty should err, their time would be  
 • too short to establish the evil, and as it would be  
 • impossible for them to be chosen again, the next  
 • parliament would remedy the mischief.—Such  
 • should a British parliament be! such I hope it will  
 • be! It is every honest Briton's duty to do so;  
 • nor shall any act of mine ever seem to countenance  
 • a practice that contradicts this principle. By  
 • speaking and acting in strict conformity to the dic-  
 • tates of *my* judgment and conscience, have I hither-  
 • to succeeded, contrary to the apprehensions of  
 • many, beyond the expectations of all; and the  
 • same means, and none other, will I ever pursue.—  
 • Heaven bless your pious intentions;’ (said the gen-  
 • tleman, taking his hand and kissing it in a rapture,  
 • tears of joy running down his face) ‘Heaven will

‘ bless them : happy Sovereign in such a servant ;  
 ‘ happy Britain in such a guardian.’—Saying this,  
 he took his leave of my master, who went directly  
 to wait upon his.

---

## C H A P. XVI.

*CHRYSA L's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSA L enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.*

**T**HE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man ; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal in his breast.—‘ Sire, (said my master, addressing him  
 ‘ with the most respectful sincerity) here are the dis-  
 ‘ patches which you ordered me to draw up yester-  
 ‘ day : since I had the honour of your commands  
 ‘ then, I have received some farther intelligence, that  
 ‘ confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disap-  
 ‘ pointed, but not deterred, by the repulse which  
 ‘ they justly met with from you, those people have  
 ‘ the confidence to make a new attempt, and think  
 ‘ to obtain by menaces, what was refused to their  
 ‘ intreaties ; but the event will convince them, that  
 ‘ it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the  
 ‘ suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the  
 ‘ natural strength of your dominions, and stronger  
 ‘ in



' in the love of your people, you are able to assert  
 ' your own cause against all the powers of the world,  
 ' on that element which nature has pointed out for  
 ' the scene of your triumphs; nor will you permit  
 ' any other to interfere with you on it. All you  
 ' require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to  
 ' assistance: This shews your confidence in your own  
 ' strength, and your contempt of them. But even  
 ' this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to  
 ' yourself, any partiality to your enemies. Let  
 ' them either behave themselves as friends, or pro-  
 ' fess themselves foes.—This choice is indifferent to  
 ' you. As to their complaints, their own unjust ac-  
 ' tions are the cause of them; and when this is re-  
 ' moved, they will cease of course. Till then, to  
 ' seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist  
 ' in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy;  
 ' and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice  
 ' of an answer.'

' Be it so, (replied the reverend Monarch, the in-  
 ' dignation of his honest heart, bursting from his  
 ' eyes); be it so; you speak the sentiments of my  
 ' soul.'—Then turning to a favourite subject, who stood  
 near him, ' It is a pleasure to me to transact business with  
 ' this man, (continued he); he makes me understand  
 ' him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain  
 ' maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with  
 ' open honesty and boldness.'—The honour of this  
 testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy,  
 that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the  
 assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he  
 found a person waiting for him, whom he had appoint-  
 ed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest import-  
 ance.—' I have sent for you, my friend, (said my  
 ' master), on an occasion, which, I am sensible, will  
 ' give joy to your heart. You are to command a se-  
 ' parate body of troops, which have been sent to pro-  
 ' secute this necessary and just war in America. I  
 ' need

• need not put myself nor you to the pain of repeat-  
• ing the causes of the shameful inactivity, to give it  
• no severer name, by which this war has been drawn  
• into such a length: you know, and will avoid them.  
• You will not wear out opportunity, in making un-  
• necessary preparations for improbable occasions:  
• you will not damp the ardour of your soldiers by  
• delay, nor prolong a burthensome war, to enrich  
• yourself with the spoils of your country. You are  
• young, active, and brave: such a commander only  
• do British soldiers want, to lead them to victory.  
• You have no senior, no superior here, to restrain  
• the efforts of your spirit, by timid caution; at the  
• same time that your judgment will supply the place  
• of experience, and prevent your falling into the  
• misfortunes which self-sufficient brutal rashness has  
• made so fatal to others. Your instructions are  
• comprized in a few words;—make the best use your  
• judgment shall direct you, of the forces entrusted to  
• your command, to defend the property, and avenge  
• the wrongs of your fellow subjects, and to vindicate  
• the honour of this abused nation.—I know  
• whom I speak to, and therefore I say no more:  
• proceed, my friend, my soldier; answer my expectations,  
• and you will fulfil the wishes of your country.—Saying thus, he embraced him tenderly; and, as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the street, he saw a number of disabled soldiers, who had placed themselves before his window, to solicit relief for their miseries.—‘O, my friend, (continued he, grasping his hand), behold those victims  
• of the unjust ambition of that enemy, against whom  
• you go; and let the sight add the wings of an eagle  
• to your haste, to tear down a power, which has  
• been thus fatal to so many of your brave country-  
• men, to prevent any more from suffering the like  
• evils from the same cause.—The man who does  
• not use, to the best advantage, the means entrusted

' ed to him by his country, to destroy its enemies, is  
 ' guilty of all the evils which those enemies may af-  
 ' terwards do to his country.—Shall I beg a fa-  
 ' vour of my friend? Distribute this money (giving  
 ' him an handful of guineas) among those men, as  
 ' from yourself. If it is not enough to give each a  
 ' guinea; I will be your debtor for what is wanting;  
 ' if it is more, keep the residue in your hands, to ap-  
 ' ply to the same use, on the first occasion you meet.  
 ' This much will relieve their real wants, and more  
 ' might only tempt them to excess. The invidious-  
 ' ness of my station makes it improper for me to do  
 ' even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for  
 ' ostentation. Adieu, my friend: Heaven guard  
 ' you in the day of battle, and guide your sword to  
 ' victory.'

I here quitted the service of this great man, the in-  
 stances of whose conduct which I have given, make  
 any farther character of him unnecessary.

The regard with which the minister had addressed  
 himself to my present master, raised my curiosity to  
 take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not  
 but I might leave his possession directly: but my fears  
 were agreeably disappointed; for the number of  
 guineas, given to him by my master, exceeding that  
 of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it  
 fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confi-  
 dence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed  
 his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed  
 his charitable commission, and then went directly  
 home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mo-  
 ther, and kissing her hand in rapture; ' O, madam,  
 ' (said he), congratulate your happy son: My pray-  
 ' ers at length are heard, and I am blessed with an  
 ' opportunity of proving to the world my attach-  
 ' ment to the service, my ardour for the glory of my  
 ' country: I am honoured with a separate command  
 ' in



‘in America, where Heaven fires my soul with an  
 ‘assurance, that I shall have the happiness of crush-  
 ‘ing the injurious power of our enemies, in the very  
 ‘place where it first attacked my country; where it  
 ‘has too long triumphed in its wrongs.’

‘Heaven bless my son,’ (replied the matron, as  
 soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permit-  
 ted her to speak); ‘Heaven guard my son, and bless  
 ‘his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return  
 ‘with the honour of having done his duty, and I  
 ‘shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if  
 ‘my heart felt a doubt for him? my son will never  
 ‘fail to do his duty; he will never fall from the  
 ‘paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to  
 ‘colour over, with specious arguments, the loss of  
 ‘his honour. He will not make his mother ashamed  
 ‘of having born him, nor bring her gray hairs  
 ‘with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the  
 ‘instructions which have formed his youth, I know  
 ‘the principles of his heart, I know my own blood  
 ‘better.—But, O my son! remember also, that pru-  
 ‘dence distinguishes true courage from rashness; that  
 ‘your country has now a peculiar interest in your  
 ‘life, and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by  
 ‘any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged  
 ‘mother, who hangs weeping over her grave, till  
 ‘you return. Remember your——

‘O, my mother, no more! recal not ideas, which  
 ‘my present situation requires me to forget. Fear  
 ‘not: your son will not be a disgrace to the honest  
 ‘race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty  
 ‘as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man, sensible  
 ‘of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether  
 ‘I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand  
 ‘again, is only known to Heaven; but it is in my  
 ‘power to promise, that the name of your son shall  
 ‘never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his  
 ‘actions require the palliation of excuse from his  
 ‘friends..

friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled; one day of glory is better than an age of idleness or dishonour. Adieu, my mother; your blessing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your son: one tender parting more, and then my heart must be resigned to other cares.—‘Heaven bless! Heaven guard my son!’ and then, as he went from her, ‘O glory! what a tribute dost thou exact from wretched mortals!’

My master paused a moment, to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to such a parting, and then hastened to another scene of equal tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth, between my master and a young lady, whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no objection on either side, parental approbation gave its sanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to seal their bliss. Hard task upon a favourite lover, to communicate to the chosen of his soul, the order which was to damp rising expectation, by this delay, and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness which he had so long been suing for. But honour, and the service of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his soul aspired.

---

## CHAP. XVII.

*Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned romantic style. CHRYSAL quits the service of the general, and, after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS soon as he had recovered from the softness into which his mother's tenderness had melted him,

him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that showed her his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears. ‘What (said she, looking earnestly at him) can make a troubled gloom overcast that face, where hope and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile? Can any thing have happened to disturb the prospect so pleasing to us? Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy, or unable to share with you? It must be so; that faint, that laboured smile, betrays the sickness of your heart.’

‘O dearest wish of that heart, (replied he, taking her hand, and kissing it in ecstasy), how shall I merit such perfection? It is impossible: I am unworthy: but let my soul thank Heaven for blessing it with this opportunity of rising nearer to a level with your virtues; an hope that will soften the severity of absence, and make the delay of happiness seem shorter.’

‘What canst thou mean? (said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy)——‘Delay! I understand thee not—I urge not’——‘Mistake not, O my love, the inconsistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart—How can I say it!—Our happiness is delayed;—delayed, but to be more exalted—Honour, the service of my country calls.’—‘And am I to be left?’——‘But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid by the joy of meeting, never to part again.—O spare my heart, restrain those tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to such a trial.—The interest, the glory of my country demand my service; and my gracious master has honoured me with a station, in which my endeavours may be effectual to accomplish his commands—nay, must be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the inestimable re-

ward.’



ward?—If that reward is all you seek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is amply sufficient. Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and seek true happiness in content.—O spare my struggling heart! what can I, shall I do?—The trial is too great for human fortitude. Assist me, glory! help, O my country! support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deserve thee.—Go! go! and Heaven guide and guard your steps! (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears); I shall no longer struggle with the sacred impulse that leads you on to glory.—Then turning to him, But remember how you leave me! think what I feel till you return!—What I must be, should’—The horror of this thought made her unable to say more; he flew into her arms, and, mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace, ‘This is too much,’ (said he); this is too much.—I can never repay this excess of goodness.—Then, breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthusiasm—‘Heaven gives my soul (continued he) this foretaste of happiness, as an earnest of success: I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels must prevail.’—Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state, the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to such a sacrifice.

But glory, and the interest of his country, soon dissipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession, to see the

effects of these cares ; such objects as I was designed for, occurred too frequently, to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established on the principles of virtue, than there. To select any one instance, would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head, to raise the trophies of the *French in America*. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he *changed* me for a quartern of that liquid fire, the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be satisfied with so little. Quartern followed quartern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor ; when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself.—The scenes I saw in this service, were all of the same kind ; but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me, as a present, to an officer of the customs that very night.—By this faithful steward of the public, I was, next morning, given by the factor to a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in *Flanders* lace, whither he was just going, on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was *honest Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon

soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. ‘I wish (said the father) that we were safe at our journey’s end; for, though I have planned matters so well, that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.’—‘I do not understand you, (replied the son); I thought this was but such a journey as I have often known you to take, and that you were going no farther than *Holland*, on some business of her Grace’s.’—‘She thinks so indeed, (returned the father); nor would I have her think otherwise as yet; but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that, having gained the confidence of this woman by many services, I at length suggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she has amassed, would be to send it to *Holland* by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of *Germany*, now that hers, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of oeconomy which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms.—She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negotiate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.

‘This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into *Holland*, that I might be able to seize such an happy opportunity as this at a moment’s warning.’—‘But you cannot think, father, of staying in *Holland*. You will be imme-



diately pursued thither.—‘ In *Holland*, fool ! no,  
 ‘ nor in the smoke of *Europe* at all : I design to set  
 ‘ out for *Africa*, without a moment’s loss ; and hope  
 ‘ to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any  
 ‘ Christian power, before she can suspect any thing  
 ‘ of my flight : and it will heighten the pleasure of  
 ‘ my success to think, that, while I am failing to a  
 ‘ land of circumcision, she will sit in anxious expect-  
 ‘ ation of my return.’

‘ But, father, is it not injustice to deceive her con-  
 ‘ fidence, and rob her of so great a sum of money ?’

‘ Injustice, fool ! injustice to a Christian ! Say  
 ‘ such another word, and I discard you, disclaim you  
 ‘ for ever ! thy converse with these *Gentiles* has de-  
 ‘ bauched thy faith. What do we mix with them,  
 ‘ what do we serve them, what do we bear their  
 ‘ abominations, their insults for, but to make our  
 ‘ own advantage of them ? Fools ! vain presumptu-  
 ‘ ous fools ! to imagine that any benefits, any grati-  
 ‘ tude can bind us to them, or change the innate  
 ‘ hatred of our souls to a sect that has been the cause  
 ‘ of our dispersion and ruin. But, to silence any  
 ‘ weak scruples about injustice, with a word, have I  
 ‘ not the authority of our holy Scripture, the ex-  
 ‘ ample of our great prophet *Moses* himself for what  
 ‘ I do, who borrowed the wealth of the *Egyptians*  
 ‘ without a design of ever returning them, to pay the  
 ‘ children of *Israel* for the labours they had been put  
 ‘ to by their oppressors, and enrich them when they  
 ‘ should arrive at the land of promise ?—And is not  
 ‘ this my case ? have I not laboured hourly for this  
 ‘ Gentile woman without payment ? Did she not join  
 ‘ to defraud our people of a greater sum than this,  
 ‘ to which my mite was added too, under the pre-  
 ‘ tence of procuring us a settlement ? And did she  
 ‘ not refuse to return it, when the attempt failed of  
 ‘ success ? What then is this, but a just retaliation ?  
 ‘ a fulfilling of our law, that says, *An eye for an eye,*  
 ‘ and

‘and a tooth for a tooth?’ And I do not want her wealth to make my settlement happy in the land of my forefathers.’—The son had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this time, the wind and tide served us; we arrived in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except I should take notice to you of the sordid hypocrisy of my master as such, who, not to violate the customs of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expence.

---

### C H A P. XVIII.

*They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversation between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend VAN HOGAN in great distress.*

AS soon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my master set his son to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself, for a moment, to speak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew; but, entering directly upon business, ‘My friend *Aminadab*, (said his mightiness), I am glad to see you; I hope you have brought us good news, and that there is a stop put to the insolence of those *English* pirates, who, in a manner, block up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade.’

‘Really, my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied my master), I am sorry that I cannot give you any satisfactory account of that affair: for such is the perverseness of the people in power there at present, that they will not listen to any arguments.’—

‘Will they not take money?’—‘No, indeed; nor

' does the boldest of us all know how to offer it with  
 ' safety, it was rejected with such indignant rage the  
 ' last time, though, in truth, the offer was a tempt-  
 ' ing one. I have seen the day, and that not very  
 ' long since, when half that sum would have done  
 ' twice as much. But matters are most strangely al-  
 ' tered of late. They have got a manager who nei-  
 ' ther drinks, nor games, keeps running horses, nor  
 ' whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and  
 ' therefore has not such pressing demands for money,  
 ' as used to make our negotiations go on so smoothly  
 ' with others formerly.'

' Death! what shall we do? Is the whole court cor-  
 ' rupted by this example? are they all infected with  
 ' such a strange madness?'

' No, it has not gone so far as that yet; and it is  
 ' to be hoped, that the example of a few will not be  
 ' able to do so much; and that when the novelty of  
 ' his humour wears off a little, it will go out of  
 ' fashion insensibly, and things return to their old  
 ' course. This is supposing the worst, that the en-  
 ' gines, now at work to overturn this new set, should  
 ' miscarry.'

' But what must we do in the mean time? We  
 ' shall be ruined before that may happen! we must  
 ' declare war, and do ourselves justice.'

' But may not the remedy there be worse than  
 ' the disease? Are your affairs in such a condition  
 ' as to entitle you to take such a step? Consider  
 ' what a mighty naval force they have at this time!  
 ' consider how you will be able to resist it.'

' That is the thing, the only thing that has kept  
 ' us quiet so long! But something must be done;  
 ' another AMBOYNA affair, or some such stroke, must  
 ' bring us satisfaction, and revenge too.'

' Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do:  
 ' this is no time for such strokes; nor are the present  
 ' governors such people as those, who suffered them

so



• so tamely: they will be apt to return the stroke,  
 • in a manner that may be attended with conse-  
 • quences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate those  
 • haughty Islanders as much as you: except some  
 • few particulars, the sense of the whole nation has  
 • ever been against us; nor would they suffer us a-  
 • mong them now, but that we have availed our-  
 • selves so well of the favour of those few, as to get  
 • the command of almost all the money in the king-  
 • dom into our own hands, so that now they dare  
 • not provoke us too far; though I own I do sus-  
 • pect that the design of the present rulers, is to  
 • get out of our power as soon as this war is  
 • over, if our old friends do not counteract their  
 • designs.

• But, all this time, this talking signifies nothing to  
 • our affairs; what do they say to them? What  
 • reasons do they give for encouraging these out-  
 • rages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of  
 • justice?

• In truth, my friend, a great many, that are  
 • more just than agreeable; more easily exclaimed a-  
 • gainst, than refuted. In answer to your alleging  
 • the faith of treaties, they insist that they strictly  
 • observe the sense and spirit of them, while you on-  
 • ly cavil about the words, it being absurd to think  
 • that any nation should bind up its own hands, in  
 • the manner you pretend; or, even if that was the  
 • meaning of the treaty, at the time when it was  
 • made, that your abuse of the indulgence given by  
 • it, makes it necessary to retract it now: and they  
 • express the most indignant surprise at your insisting  
 • so strongly upon one article, which at best is but  
 • doubtful, and would be in itself absurd, in the sense  
 • you wrest it to, while you break through so many,  
 • the meaning of which you do not pretend even to  
 • dispute.

• Then

‘ Then we will dispute no longer about them ; we  
 ‘ will enforce their observation, by the same methods  
 ‘ that originally obtained them.’—‘ Aye, if that  
 ‘ could be ; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you ; I  
 ‘ am afraid those means are out of your power ; you  
 ‘ were then really *mighty states*, respectable for your  
 ‘ power, and dreadful for your valour ; but the case  
 ‘ is now altered, I need not say how.’

‘ Ingrateful ENGLISH ! to forget how we rescued  
 ‘ them from popery and slavery, but the other day :  
 ‘ had it not been for us, they would, at best, have been  
 ‘ but slaves to FRANCE.’

‘ The very charge they make against you, who,  
 ‘ they say, could never have resisted the power of  
 ‘ Spain, or established your liberties, if their queen  
 ‘ Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of *your*  
 ‘ *poor distressed states*. As for the affair you mention,  
 ‘ though they do not deny the benefit, they take  
 ‘ off from the obligation, by attributing it to self-  
 ‘ interested motives ; as they say you were convin-  
 ‘ ced, that if any thing happened to them, you  
 ‘ must sink of course : beside, that you have been  
 ‘ amply paid for this, by the immense expence of  
 ‘ blood and treasure with which they established your  
 ‘ barrier, in the late wars, which they evidently en-  
 ‘ tered into on your accounts, to the neglect of their  
 ‘ own interest.

‘ In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in  
 ‘ what they say, that I would not advise you to in-  
 ‘ sist upon these points any more.’—‘ Confound the  
 ‘ points ! and the memories that rip them up so !  
 ‘ What shall we do ! I myself lost a ship last week,  
 ‘ worth fifty thousand ducats ; though all the  
 ‘ precautions possible were taken ; as, sending her  
 ‘ papers by another ship, supplying her with false  
 ‘ bills of lading, false clearances, false consign-  
 ‘ ments ; in short, every thing that human heart  
 ‘ could devise.’

‘ And

‘ And I know she was as well sworn for, to prevent  
 ‘ her being condemned, as human conscience could  
 ‘ swear; but nothing could elude the captors, or de-  
 ‘ ceive or influence the judges.—But she was not in-  
 ‘ fured?’

‘ Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by in-  
 ‘ suring, except the ships are to be cast away: O my  
 ‘ ship! my ship! I will have war.’—‘ And then all  
 ‘ your ships go at once.’—‘ I am distracted, what  
 ‘ shall we do?’

‘ My friend, the best, the only advice I can give  
 ‘ you, is to put a stop to this trade, and open your  
 ‘ eyes to your true interest. I hate the *English*, as  
 ‘ much as you possibly can; but that should not  
 ‘ make me ruin myself to be revenged on them: they  
 ‘ are your only natural allies; they first delivered,  
 ‘ they still sustain you; nor can you support the  
 ‘ very name of an independent state without them.  
 ‘ Provoke them not, therefore, too far; I wonder  
 ‘ how they have borne so much already: preserve  
 ‘ a fair neutrality; they despise your assistance, and  
 ‘ desire no more: nor by your avarice force them  
 ‘ to measures that must end in your ruin. If you  
 ‘ break with them, whom will you apply to?  
 ‘ The *French* have given you many proofs, that  
 ‘ they wait only for an opportunity to enslave you:  
 ‘ *Spain* has at length learned its own interest, and  
 ‘ will not break with the only power, whose friend-  
 ‘ ship can be of real service to it: and this very war  
 ‘ gives a sufficient demonstration of *Austrian* faith  
 ‘ and gratitude.

‘ This is the obvious situation of things, and must  
 ‘ strike a person at the first view: but a moment’s  
 ‘ thought will shew them, even in a stronger light.  
 ‘ For, to grant that *France* and *Austria* both may be  
 ‘ sincere in their professions to you; does not reason  
 ‘ shew you the imprudence of trusting to promises  
 ‘ which it is more than probable they will not be able  
 ‘ to



to perform? For if you will but divest yourself of passion and prejudice for a moment, you will see that the measures entered upon, and the means used to carry them on, by the *English* at this time, must, in all human appearance, disappoint the schemes of their enemies, and retort upon their own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. Indeed the prospect is such, that it is impossible to say where things will end: every interior fund is exhausted; every external resource cut off; their own trade is absolutely ruined; the treasures of *Spain*, which supplied them in their last wars, are no longer at their command; so that I can foresee nothing less than their becoming bankrupts, not only to themselves, but also to every foreign state, and individual, whose avarice of present gain has made them supply their wants.

Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of an unfortunate campaign, which the success of another, or some lucky hit, may restore. It is the natural consequence of a system of measures, plann'd with judgment, and prosecuted with vigour, by a minister who will not fail to improve it to the most solid advantage. And this I say, not solely from my own opinion. You know I have had connections with persons able to give me the best information, by the assistance of which I have traced the progress of these affairs with astonishment: and therefore, as *England* has thus at length shewn a superiority in council, the usual resource of patching up a good peace, at the end of an unsuccessful war, seems also to be precluded from them.

As for the house of *Austria*, it has ever been a dead weight upon its friends, though its insatuated ingratitude to *England*, which had been in a manner its sole support for near a century, will probably prevent any other state from undertaking such  
a burthen,

‘ a burthen, so that it must sink back into its original obscurity and barbarism.

‘ Thus you see, my friend, that depending upon *France*, is leaning on a broken reed; and trusting to *Austria*, going for shelter under a falling wall. What then can you do if the *English* should take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to punish your avaricious partiality to their enemies?

‘ Your power is, in every instance, contemptible; your navy is gone absolutely to decay; your land forces are filled with old men and children; your officers, who might have served you, have been obliged to enter into other services for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pusillanimous burghers who barter their votes for such a share of the spoils of the public. Your finances are in the lowest state of embarrassment; your public spirit, your valour, your virtue, all swallowed up by selfishness, and sordid love of gain; every thing in the situation that seems to invite ruin, if it is not speedily prevented; and that can possibly be done no other way, than as I have mentioned: for, as I have said, and must again repeat, things are now on a footing there that you do not seem to be properly aware of. The people are sensible of their own strength; their governors exert it properly, and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner insures success to their attempts. Consider this fair, this friendly representation of real facts, and you will soon see the improbability of their bearing with you any longer; or suffering you to defeat the end of their military efforts, by carrying on the trade of their enemies, and so enabling them to continue the war.’

‘ Is it come to this? Are the friends, on whom we depended most, turned against us? Are you an advocate for our enemies, and would persuade us to  
‘ give

‘ give up the most advantageous branch of trade we have?’

‘ Why will you let your passion blind you thus? I have told you before, and repeat it again, that of all christians I hate the *English* most, because they resemble us least; as I love the *Dutch* most, as you come nearest to ourselves, both in practice and profession. But my passions never blind me! and therefore I speak the dictates of reason; I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you.’

‘ Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have one stroke left to humble them; and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their funds.’

‘ Will you so? at a third part loss? O *Moses*! what fools are those christians? Do you not see that even this stroke, as you call it, is guarded against? that, apprehensive of such an attempt, they have lowered the particular funds in which your money chiefly lies, so far, that the loss of selling out now would be intolerable? And whose is this money which you would draw out? the property of private people: absurd thought! if it was the money of the public, it would not be strange to see it sacrificed to private interest; but there is no instance, in all your history, of private property being given up voluntarily for the redress of public wrongs.

‘ Friend *Hogan*, I am in haste: my affairs call me elsewhere; when I shall see you again, is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miss this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your *affairs* in *London*: nor would I have another amuse you with hopes that must deceive you in the end: while it was in my power to serve you, I did: I abused their confidence; I betrayed their secrets to you: but I can do it no longer; nor can  
‘ any



any other to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed.—Adieu.

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

---

### C H A P. XIX.

*AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for AFRICA. CHRYSAL remains with a DUTCH banker. The principles and conscience of a good DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL is sent into GERMANY. His opinion of the DUTCH.*

THE young *Israelite* met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* blessed the God of his fathers; and, to complete the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of silver*, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villany.

But I went not with them: my *British* shape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there.—My *Hebrew* master had scarce left the banker into whose hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgic* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghast at the news he had re-

ceived from him, and something else which had come to his knowledge since.

‘ O *Mynbeer* ! (said he), we are all blown up and undone ; the flood is pouring in upon us. — ‘ What is the matter now, *Mynbeer* (replied the banker), that throws you into this strange consternation ? The worms have not destroyed the dams, nor an earthquake swallowed up the spice islands ?’

‘ Worse, worse if possible than even these. Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient *English* have refused to release our ships that were taken carrying ammunition and provisions to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done to divert this blow ? — ‘ Really, *Mynbeer*, I cannot tell ; the case is bad enough, to be sure : but it is no more than was to be expected ; it was not to be thought that they should always remain such passive fools, as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.’

‘ Death ! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus ! But say what you will, my *Province* shall never bear it. Why, I have received advice this minute, that our ships which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned, and that they are as little moved at our menaces as they were at our entreaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship left in the *Texel*.’ — ‘ Nay, mine shall escape, I’m resolved. — ‘ What will you do to save ’em ? — ‘ Not run them into the danger, *Mynbeer*.’ — ‘ How, give up the trade ? — ‘ Most certainly, since it cannot be carried on with safety any longer ; and glad that I have come off so well. — ‘ I do not understand you. — ‘ You are too warm, *Mynbeer*, too sanguine in the pursuit of your projects. While the surprize or fright of the late managers in *England* gave

' gave me reason to think that they would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade in this way as any other; but as soon as I saw the people recover their senses, and the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired.'—' And what do you intend to do now?'—' Keep fair with those whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and throw my business into another channel; by which management I have already succeeded so far, that I have got the *British* remittances to the parties engaged in the present war.'—' Why, there may be something in this; and if one scheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example.'—' And pray what is that, *Mynheer*?'—' No more than the old cry of piracy; but this is so laid, that it can hardly fail of success. We have bribed the captain of an *English* privateer to rifle a ship that we prepare properly for the purpose, and then to come into the way of one of our men of war, which is to take him and bring him in, where he is to insult the government, and vindicate his outrages on the pretence of authority.'

' And pray, *Mynheer*, what can you propose from all this, beside having the foolish villain hanged?'

' Why, the *English*, in detestation of such villany, will give up the point of searching our ships, when they see their authority abused in such a manner, and we shall gain our end that way; or, if they do not, our own people will be so enraged at the insult and injustice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war against them; and so we shall obtain it the other. The pirate, when he has served our turn, we are to let escape; and it will be no great loss to the world if half a score of his crew are hanged.'

' A very just and public-spirited scheme indeed! to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to commit, and engage your country in a war that



‘ must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjustifiable trade.

‘ *Mynbeer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when *my* interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you, I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it to the state: the rest may ly upon your own head.

‘ Any thing in the way of trade, my conscience complies with without scruple. I can take every oath that every officer in the customs in *Europe* can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, farther than they agree with my interest: I can supply the enemies of my country with arms to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes toward the support of the war: I can receive circumcision, stroke down my beard, and swear by *Mahomet*, to avoid a tax at *Smyrna*: I can trample on the cross, deny *Christ*, and call myself a *Dutchman*, to obtain leave to trade in *Japan*; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

‘ I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the *German* princes whom *England* keeps in pay to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the *French* ambassador to settle terms with him, for remitting the money that is to pay the army which fights against the allies of *England*. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of our country, will let you open your eyes to your true interest.’

*Mynbeer*

*Mynbeer Van Hogan* departed, rather silenced than satisfied with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negotiate the *hire* of a principality, with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnip field, and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference as if he would have bargained for a cask of herrings; in which service it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious of my late master, I must own there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where the very profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it being the absence of one vice, hypocrisy, which they rejected as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities without reserve or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actors give a dignity to the scenes, and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and lost in the confusion of nations.

---

#### C H A P. XX.

*CHRYSAI's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudices and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.*

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory, in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion, and the excellency of its laws from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that, not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess, insensible that your severest wants would be abundance to millions who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said, that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good.

The lust of power, and the intoxication of glory, may seem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature; but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it, who are insensible to these fantastic motives, or at least cannot delude themselves with the faintest hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries that were the scene of the present war; but one more particularly, that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most.—There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the loss was so severe, and so equal on both sides, that as soon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory,  
while



while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcases carried, like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an *English* gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions are thrown promiscuously together, when the conversation happening to turn upon the war which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Englishman* chanced to say, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as at that time laboured to oppress the King of *Bulgaria*, was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politics to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that  
could

could be instanced in the Christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rise superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflection, so injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was so great, that he could not suppress it till the gentleman should conclude, but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity; ‘What do you mean, Sir (said he), by saying that this war will end in the dishonour of the King of France? Was not his motive for entering into it the most disinterested and glorious, to support the rights of sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper sense of duty and obedience? And has not the success been answerable to the greatness of his designs? Have not his forces been every where victorious by land and sea?’

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken, drew the eyes of all present upon the speaker, a little old withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say flesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit supplied all these disadvantages, and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long, his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury; ‘How!’ (said

‘ (said he), the army of *France* ever victorious over  
 ‘ *Bulgaria*! what assurance can dictate such a false-  
 ‘ hood? Where have they obtained one victory?  
 ‘ where have they escaped defeat, except when the  
 ‘ superiority of their numbers has exceeded all pro-  
 ‘ portion? and, even then, their slain have generally  
 ‘ equalled the whole amount of the forces whom  
 ‘ they fought with. What armies have they lost  
 ‘ already! how few of these which remain will ever  
 ‘ return to their native home, even in the wretched  
 ‘ condition that you do?’

These last words raised a general laugh at the per-  
 son who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more  
 maimed and helpless condition than the one to whom  
 they were addressed, having lost both his arms, and  
 one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and sub-  
 mitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind,  
 ‘ I see, gentlemen (said he) that you laugh at my  
 ‘ mentioning the wretchedness of any other living  
 ‘ creature with contempt, who am such a sufferer my-  
 ‘ self! but what absurdities will not passion hurry  
 ‘ men into? and how could human patience bear to  
 ‘ hear this *Frenchman* boast of the victories of his  
 ‘ monarch, whose forces I myself have assisted to rout  
 ‘ at every place wherever I have met them!’

‘ You rout the forces of my master! (replied the  
 ‘ other) my master’s forces would eat up all your  
 ‘ master’s subjects for a breakfast.’—‘ I do not deny  
 ‘ their number nor their appetites, (returned the  
 ‘ *Bulgarian*) they leave sufficient evidence of both  
 ‘ wherever they go; cruelty and rapine lead forth  
 ‘ their armies; famine and desolation mark their  
 ‘ marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift your  
 ‘ hand, as you regard your life: else, loath as I am  
 ‘ to make misery ridiculous, by a quarrel between  
 ‘ two such wretches as we are, though I have not an  
 ‘ hand



hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample on your carcase.

*Morblieu!* compare the mighty MONARQUE of FRANCE with a little GERMAN king!

You mistake me greatly; I never meant to compare them: the greatness of your monarch I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfortune to his subjects; whereas our sovereign is the father of his people, and never exerts his power but to their advantage.

Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth; any thing against myself, I can despise; but my king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear spoken of with disrespect, while I have a voice left to assert his cause: I have fought for him; I have fought with him: for *he* does not sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his subjects are encountering hardships and dangers, to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his people; and he fights their battles with them; and the only regret I feel for the loss of my arms is, that I can employ them no longer in his service, for which I would lay down my life this minute with joy, could it gain him the least advantage, or was necessary to prove my attachment to him.

But since I can no longer have the happiness of being of service to him, all I have now to do is, to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and success, disturbed by one repining wish, one just complaint.

But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can say so? Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign, who personally provided for the necessities, the comforts of his men, as I did? Is he sure of a peace-

ful

ful retreat at home, safe from the additional distress of want, as I am?

‘Not at all; he fought for he knew not what, he knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common indispensable necessities of nature; nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch’s last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means for its exertion.’—All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply, but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying, with a sneer, ‘that since his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer.’

This poor-spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied, with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the *Englishman* received it in another manner: for, drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and, putting them himself into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*, ‘Accept of these, my brother soldier, (said he) to make your journey into your native country more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your sovereign and country, than your sensible attachment to them merits. As far as I shall go your way I will take care of you myself, and that will defray the expence of the rest of your journey with comfort.’

## CH A P. XXI.

*The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSA L is carried to his destined master.*

THE Bulgarian was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which, doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance.

As soon as he recovered utterance, ‘ Such (said he) is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons of liberty: such the generosity of heart, that always extends the ready hand of a *Briton* with relief to the distressed. May Heaven preserve to your happy nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty of a retribution from those treasures which never fail.’

The turn of this soldier’s discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, ‘ If he had been bred to arms, or how long he had professed the military life, and in what station?’

‘ O, Sir, (replied he, with a sigh that seemed to tear his heart), your question recalls to my memory scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, and obliges me to relate such things as would draw tears from *Tartars*, *Pandours*, or the crueller soldiers



\* diers of the King of *France*.—I was not bred to  
 \* arms, nor have I followed the military profession  
 \* long, or in any other rank than that which rage  
 \* and despair first placed me in, when I offered my-  
 \* self to my sovereign to repel the invaders, and re-  
 \* venge the desolation of my bleeding country. My  
 \* \* unhappy story is no more than this.

\* I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the son of a minister  
 \* of the gospel, who, observing a desire of knowledge  
 \* in my youth, encouraged and improved it by his  
 \* \* own precepts and example, and led my studious  
 \* mind through the sublimest paths of science.

\* As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently esta-  
 \* blished to be proof against the levity of youth, and  
 \* \* temptations of sense, he yielded to my intreaties,  
 \* and I was admitted into the sacred order of which  
 \* he was a member, and made the perfection of hu-  
 \* \* man wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue, un-  
 \* der the direction of the divine word, the business  
 \* \* of my happy life. Happy indeed then! but now  
 \* the recollection of that happiness aggravates my  
 \* \* present misery, in the irrecoverable loss of it, al-  
 \* most to despair.

\* As the religion of the benign Redeemer of man-  
 \* \* kind does not enjoin impossibilities, by requiring us  
 \* to eradicate passions which are the essence of our  
 \* \* nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction  
 \* of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and  
 \* the basis of our being, and fulfils the first divine  
 \* \* command, by continuing our species, and increas-  
 \* ing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the im-  
 \* \* pulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of  
 \* a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I  
 \* \* vainly thought, the sum of human happiness, by a  
 \* numerous offspring, which grew up on the knees of  
 \* \* their aged grandfire, my father, now become too  
 \* feeble for the active duties, while my labours sup-  
 \* \* plied the necessaries of life to my contented family,

‘ in which I thus stood the happy centre of filial and paternal love.

‘ In this blessed state did I advance toward heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues, brought this destructive war upon the dominions of our sovereign. O, my father! my children! my wife! in one day did I lose you all. These eyes beheld my habitation reduced to ashes, my children massacred in the wantonness of cruelty, in despite of the prayers of my aged father, whose snow-white hairs, whose whole appearance, would have struck the ruthless hearts of the ancient heathen *Gauls* with reverence; in despite of the cries of my beautiful wife, who both begged to draw their fury on themselves from the defenceless innocents! But all in vain: the murderers, deaf to their cries and intreaties, insensible to the beauty of the babes, who stood smiling at the sword that hung over their heads, first butchered them as in sport, then abused the person of my wife to death, and mangled my father’s breathless body, whose tender heart the grief of such a sight had burst, while *I*, unhappier far than any, stood looking on, bound to a tree, with my jaws distended with the head of a spear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a *French priest* standing by, encouraging their cruelty, as meritorious against heretics, and insultingly bidding me *preach now to my congregation*; at the same time refusing me the release of death, which I besought by all the signs despair could suggest, and making them leave me, naked, and whipped till my body was all one wound, to perish by famine and grief.

‘ But Heaven had ordained otherwise for me: some of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury, came as soon as night favoured their fears, to learn our fate, and offer any assistance in their power. They unbound me; they buried the re-

‘ mains

' mains of my slaughtered family, and forced me  
 ' from the grave to their retreat in the woods, where  
 ' they healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my  
 ' distress. But all their arguments would have been  
 ' too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire  
 ' of revenge taken possession of my soul, and silenced  
 ' every other thought.

' As soon as I had recovered strength, I hastened to  
 ' the army of my sovereign, where I threw myself at  
 ' his feet, and told him all my distress. He heard me  
 ' with pity; he shed tears at my sad story; and,  
 ' raising me with his own hand, ' Be comforted, my  
 ' brother, (said the mighty monarch to his meanest  
 ' subject), be comforted; the losses of the just will  
 ' be repaid in heaven; there thy happy family expect  
 ' thine arrival; there thy virtues will be rewarded,  
 ' thy joys complete, when the evils of this world,  
 ' which endure but for a moment, shall be at an end.  
 ' The horrors of war agree not with the innocence of  
 ' your past life, or the humane tenderness of your  
 ' disposition, and would but aggravate your griefs,  
 ' by the unhappy unavoidable repetition of the like  
 ' scenes of ruin. Retire therefore to my capital,  
 ' where all comforts of life shall be provided for you,  
 ' to alleviate your distress, while your prayers assist  
 ' us in the day of battle.'

' I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue  
 ' was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at  
 ' his feet, and, wringing my hands, ' O Sir, (said I),  
 ' this goodness is too great for man! alas, I am un-  
 ' able to obey its dictates! my soul languishes for  
 ' vengeance! O bear with human infirmity, and per-  
 ' mit me to fight under thy command! Heaven  
 ' heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented  
 ' my ruin: let me then have recourse to other me-  
 ' thods for redress: let me contribute my poor help  
 ' to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country.  
 ' I die this moment, if my prayer is refused.'



• Be then my companion in this just war, (said  
• my sovereign, raising me again); and, since thy  
• sacred function must not be disgraced with any o-  
• ther rank, fight by my side, and lead me to suc-  
• cess.

• From that day have I followed his steps in the  
• field of battle at an awful distance, and been wit-  
• ness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour,  
• till, in the late action, a cannon shot took off both  
• my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own  
• horse for him to mount, his having been killed un-  
• der him as I fought by his side.

• He expressed concern at my misfortune, and  
• commanded me to retire to his own tent; but an  
• *Austrian* hussar, the moment after, cut me down  
• with his sabre, though, in the unpremeditated in-  
• stinct of self-preservation, I had held up both my  
• bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

• Here I lay among my fellow sufferers in the com-  
• mon calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke  
• of fate from the horse's feet, or the pillagers of the  
• field. But Heaven had otherwise ordained; and,  
• after two days weltering in my blood, I was reliev-  
• ed, and recovered by charity, to the condition to  
• which you see me, and am now striving to go and  
• avail myself of my master's humane offer, which  
• your benevolence enables me to do with comfort.

• This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first prompt-  
• ed me to speak, has been a sharer with me also in  
• the charity which relieved us; where our common  
• calamity created a kind of friendship between us;  
• and our necessities suggested it to us, to combine  
• the remains of our limbs for mutual assistance, he  
• preparing our victuals and feeding me, while I  
• have carried not only our poor baggage, but him  
• also upon my back.

• But that alliance is at an end, not because the  
• relief which you so generously have bestowed upon  
• me,

me, may seem to free me from the necessity of his assistance, for I must beg your leave to divide it with him, as half is sufficient for me; but that my soul abhors the principles which first led him into this distress, and which even such sufferings cannot show the impious absurdity of; and disclaims connection with the enemy of my gracious sovereign, who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot deny, nor longer resist the virtues that have raised it.

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the minister of my destined master, who immediately carried me to him.

---

### C H A P. XXII.

*How CHRYSAL found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.*

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance, to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who, presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee, 'The subsidy, may it please your most Serene Highness, from *England*,' (said he.)—'It is well,

(replied the sovereign); but upon what terms?—  
 'The same your Highness had last year.'—'No  
 more! they shall not have my men: I can have  
 more elsewhere: *France* offers better.'—'Then I  
 must return this money, please your Highness.'—  
 'Return it! no, for what?'—'If your Highness  
 does not like the terms, you will not keep the mo-  
 ney, I presume?'—'Fool, but I will! such laws may  
 bind you subject wretches, but sovereign princes are  
 above them; laws are not made for us.'—'I hum-  
 bly implore your Highness's pardon for my ig-  
 norance; then you will give those troops to  
*France*?'—'Yes, when *France* pays me for them.'—  
 'But, in the mean time, as *England* has already paid  
 your Highness, they will depend on them, and con-  
 sequently suffer by the disappointment.'—'Then let  
 them prize my friendship properly another time; I  
 am not obliged to support Kings upon their thrones  
 for nothing; I may invade, as well as guard a-  
 gainst invasion. They shall know whom they dare  
 offend.'

'Something has provoked your Highness's wrath,  
 which I am afraid my ignorance should aggravate.'—  
 'I will teach the respect that's due to sovereignty;  
 I am not King of *England*, curbed in my will, and  
 limited in power; my subjects are my slaves; they  
 dare not think of any other law beside my pleasure.  
 Death! can you think it? my minister at the court  
 of *England* writes me word, that a base plebeian  
 merchant has had the assurance to demand payment  
 for the goods he sent me last year, for the support  
 and splendor of my court, and, on its not being  
 deducted from the subsidy, to refuse supplying me  
 this year, and even to threaten complaining to their  
 parliament.'

'Now, judge you, if a sovereign prince, whose  
 forces are their security in time of danger, can  
 brook such insolence. And, to conclude the whole,  
 what



what did the *English* minister say, when my minister remonstrated with him on this affair, but that, by the laws of *England*, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will, or hindered to complain, if he thought himself aggrieved; and that the laws were sacred, and must not be infringed? Think now, if I can, with honour, keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction: I, whose subjects have no property nor laws, but my will, to be treated in such a manner by a vile trader: it is not to be borne.

I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time; because if your highness should break with the *English* now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.

Why, there may be something in that; and therefore, if they will send me the merchandize I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire.

How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised?

I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expence to me.— That is very true, if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can pay you now; for as to the promises of *France*, they are not to be depended

‘ depended on at all, whereas *England* always pays well.’

‘ I do not care. What I have gotten here I will keep, by way of reprisal, for the insult offered to my honour; and if they will have my troops, they shall pay me over again for them: so say no more on that head.’

‘ I submit; but how will your highness subsist them at home in the mean time? There must be an immediate remittance made of some of this money to *Holland* to buy provisions, for your magazines are quite exhausted, and the constant demand for men to supply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the losses they have sustained in battle, have not left sufficient to cultivate the land.’

‘ Then let them starve. I shall not expend a penny to support them: could not the women and children work? I wonder you should dare to mention such a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to support the splendour of my court, since this *Englishman* has refused to supply me?’

‘ I humbly beg your highness’s pardon; but what answer am I to send to the *English*, who have demanded that the troops should march directly?’

‘ Why, that I am so enraged at the insult offered to me by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them stir till I have satisfaction, and a new subsidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to make up the deficiencies in former years.’

‘ Deficiencies! I do not understand your highness; the subsidies have been always regularly paid.’

‘ Obey my commands. I say there have been deficiencies, which I am not at leisure to explain in this emergency; but I suppose my word will be taken for it.’

‘ I fear, your highness does not attend to the change which has lately been in *England*. The people who might have taken such an answer are

‘ now

' now out of power; and their successors are the  
 ' very men who have always been against dealing  
 ' with your highness, and may now take the advan-  
 ' tage of this breach of faith, for such I well know  
 ' they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever :  
 ' for the people begin to see their own strength, and  
 ' their governors to exert it properly, and show them  
 ' that they want no foreign assistance. And as a  
 ' proof of this, at this very time when their enemies  
 ' not only talk of invading them more confidently  
 ' than ever, but also have gone so far as to make  
 ' preparations for such an attempt, so far from being  
 ' diffident of their own strength, or intimidated to  
 ' call for help, they have actually sent a powerful  
 ' body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on  
 ' the war with vigour and success in every quarter of  
 ' the world, satisfied that the inhabitants who remain  
 ' at home are able to defend their country, and repel  
 ' every attempt that may be made against it. And  
 ' this change in their measures should give a caution  
 ' how the persons who effected it are provoked.'

' I care not, I will make the experiment; but do  
 ' you draw up your dispatches in such a manner, that  
 ' we may have it in our power to explain them to  
 ' whatever sense shall suit us best. In the mean  
 ' time, we must keep up our appearance of treating  
 ' with *France*, to give a weight to our designs.'

The minister was prevented from replying by the  
 entrance of the muster-master, who had been just  
 making a survey, and taking an account of every man  
*able to bear arms* in his highness's territories.

' Well (said his highness), how do your musters  
 ' answer? Shall I be able to enlarge the number of  
 ' my troops this year?—' May it please your most  
 ' serene highness (replied the officer), here is the re-  
 ' turn, in which I have taken down every man from  
 ' twelve to seventy, according to your commands.—  
 ' And how do they answer? better than last year, I  
 ' hope;



‘ hope ; there must be a great many boys grown up  
 ‘ since.’—‘ The list indeed looks almost as full as  
 ‘ usual ; but the late battles have so drained us of  
 ‘ men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any  
 ‘ but boys left at home, and those have been so badly  
 ‘ fed of late, that their size does not answer their  
 ‘ years, and they look wretchedly beside. So that,  
 ‘ upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it  
 ‘ very difficult to complete the forces already esta-  
 ‘ blished, much more to raise any new.’

‘ I must, I will raise them ! Tell me not of dif-  
 ‘ ficulties ! what I command shall be performed ! If  
 ‘ there are not men, the women shall put on the men’s  
 ‘ clothes and go ; I will not be shortened of my re-  
 ‘ venue : they shall fight themselves, since they have  
 ‘ not bred soldiers for me.’

‘ This, please your highness, is a list of the dis-  
 ‘ abled men, who are not able to support themselves  
 ‘ by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the  
 ‘ wars.’

‘ Disabled men ! I thought I ordered you not to  
 ‘ exchange them ; they might have remained in the  
 ‘ hands of the enemy : such I mean of them as are  
 ‘ not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the  
 ‘ lands ; or such as were not prisoners might have  
 ‘ been let perish of their wounds ; it would have  
 ‘ been a mercy to them to shorten their misery.’

‘ May it please your highness, I observed your or-  
 ‘ ders, and left a number of such wretches unex-  
 ‘ changed ; but the enemy saw into my design, and  
 ‘ sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them.  
 ‘ And now they are crying for subsistence, and de-  
 ‘ mand the arrears of their pay, which were stopped  
 ‘ while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons  
 ‘ took proper care of.’

‘ Insolent slaves ! demand pay when they are no  
 ‘ longer able to earn it ! And subsistence too ! They  
 ‘ learned this impudence from their conversation with  
 ‘ those

' those English! it is much they did not demand  
 ' roast beef and pudding too!—Hang up half of  
 ' them, the next word of the kind they dare to ut-  
 ' ter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet.  
 ' And at your peril let me hear no more of them.  
 ' As for the musters, I will have them completed;  
 ' man, woman, and child shall go! I will make my  
 ' dominions a desert, before I lessen my consequence  
 ' among the sovereign powers of Europe.'

---

### C H A P. XXIII.

*More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of gran-  
 deur. CHRYSAL is sent to the market, where he is  
 given to a Jew for bacon.*

**H**IS highness had just declared this magnani-  
 mous resolution, when the steward of his  
 household entered to let him know, that the butchers  
 and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his  
 table was supplied, had refused to send him any more  
 provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard  
 he was to receive no more subsidies from *England*;  
 and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for  
 that day, for the court was very numerous and bril-  
 liant, all the princes and princesses of the various  
 branches of his highness's most illustrious house,  
 having come to pay him a visit of congratulation, up-  
 on the birth of the most serene prince his son and  
 heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find  
 nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but  
 bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity  
 of these; the misery of his people having made them  
 venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his  
 forests, to save themselves and their families from  
 perishing by famine.

His

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure: but then, bursting into a rage, 'Hunt in my forests! (said he) audacious slaves! dearly shall they pay for their presumption! Order my troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the country waste!'—'Please you highness (replied the steward) that will not cost you the trouble of marching your troops: the country is a desert already.'

'Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence? you should have seized the author of the report, for not apprehending the criminals.'

'May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here to receive the sentence of your pleasure; and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and had borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a starving family of grand children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars; but though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go.'

'It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that stag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods, proclaiming that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief: he shall have hunting enough.'

'But what will your highness have me do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes? I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all the young princes and princesses of their illustrious families with them.'

'I care not! I am not to be disturbed on such trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my resolution: let them go home again.'

'Not



\* Not fasting, I presume? for they have already  
 \* signified, some of them, that they have come  
 \* without their breakfasts, by calling for refreshment  
 \* the moment they arrived; and indeed, I fear, the  
 \* principal motive of this visit of their highnesses,  
 \* was want of any thing to eat at home.  
 \* Confusion! what can I do? Here, take this  
 \* money, and send for victuals for them.

The sight of an handful of guineas was an agree-  
 able surprise to the steward, who had not heard of  
 the arrival of the subsidy from *England*. He re-  
 ceived them with evident pleasure, and I felt no  
 less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty,  
 of which I was sincerely sick; though by the  
 change, I fell from being the price of armies, to  
 the domestic office of going to market for a morsel  
 of bread; from the glory of causing the slaughter  
 of thousands, to the virtue of supporting the lives  
 of a few.

The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the  
 presence of his highness, called the other officers of the  
 household together, and told them, with joy in his  
 countenance, that there was no foundation for the re-  
 port of their master's breaking with *England*, so  
 that they might look famine in the face for another  
 year, and confirmed the glad-tidings by shewing them  
 the gold.

The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they lick-  
 ed their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared  
 things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity  
 of willing minds and keen appetites; while the stew-  
 ard, not caring to trust a commission of that impor-  
 tance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash  
 down a mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine,  
 and then went to market for himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I  
 left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and  
 entered into the little territories of a free state.

Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned, with the greatest dispatch, to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions, it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.

---

#### CHAP. XXIV.

*Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

**I** NOW entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessities of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the vain ostentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It was difficult to say, which hypocrisy was most absurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice. The former basely stealing, as I may say, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that of

of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every species of deceit, that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purse, to make a shew with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession, happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from business early, to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most sacred and mysterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the sacrifice of the *Passover*, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood; for which purpose, the most beautiful children were purchased at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to these ceremonies; it being a long-received opinion, that the original sacrifice of a lamb was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the



favour of Heaven to the escape of their forefathers out of *Egypt*; but that, to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But, as some traces of natural affection might remain even in hearts divested of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the *Passover* were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be *without blemish, a male of the first year*, that is, the first born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed*; during which time, they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and, in a long speech, declared the occasion of their meeting, read the original institution of the *Passover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in, and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of the horrid mystery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved by those who had provided them, who were reimbursed their expences before the sacrifice began, by the general contribution of all present.

This method was used, that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

## BOOK II.

## CHAP. I.

*The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed.  
This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice.*

**I** SEE your astonishment, how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind; as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action, against which his severest vengeance is denounced; yet such are the errors, which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions substituted in the place of immutable eternal virtue.

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this, and every other vice and folly which men are ashamed of owning themselves, his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool; and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices, we need search for the original no farther than in the  
heart



heart of man, who observing, that, to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the Divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and, measuring the Divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be; and thus he arose from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of Heaven, hindering him to see the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in and seized them, as they stood stupified with their fright.

The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers (though hardened by all the cruelties of war) with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O father! father! come and untie my hands; those ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer who commanded the party, than, starting into a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and, snatching him up in his arms, 'O my child!' (said he in an ecstasy), *have I found you? have I rescued*

- *rescued you in the very moment when you were going to*
- *be sacrificed by these wretches? O my child! my child!*

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was, in a moment, a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to their resistless rage: happier far, in having so speedy an end put to their sufferings, than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest by any other argument; but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous public death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting severity, and retaliated their wicked intentions with exemplary justice on the miserable criminals, stripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or, in case that could not be, to be educated at the public expence, as the children of the state, while their intended murderers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt.

In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whose passions were raised so high by the recovery of him, that, as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share his joy with his disconsolate wife.

The

The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse of the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the imputation of injustice, and to set the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early next morning, where the rescued infants were produced, on one side, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers, on the other, when my new master, who bore a considerable office in the state beside his military command, unfolded the whole affair in a short, but moving speech. He told them, 'That, having lost his only child, the infant there present, about a month before, and being informed, when he served in *Poland* in his youth, that the Jews had a custom of stealing, and sacrificing or murdering infants, on the night when they celebrated their *Passover*, he made no search for him, but seemed to believe a story which he had invented himself, to appease the distraction of his wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept in the garden of his country-house, from whence he was stolen; watching, in the mean time, every motion of the Jews with such exactness, that he had punctual information of their meeting at the place where he had seized them the evening before; where it was to be lamented, that the just resentment of the soldiers had anticipated the severer hand of justice, and saved them from the laws, the judgment of which he now demanded against the remaining few, for himself, and for the unknown parents of the innocent victims whom they saw before them.'

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people so high, that they were with difficulty restrained.



ed from tearing the wretches instantly in pieces, by the same arguments which had saved them from the soldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defence; for, though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy; and beside, many of the people, who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murder, with the strongest appearance of justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay loaded with chains till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very spot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being rased to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact, confiscated to the use of the state.

---

## CHAP. II.

*A breach of neutrality, properly resented, brings CHRYSA L into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The King of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the fight of CHRYSA L.*

**T**HIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was, had professed a neutrality in the present war, but, whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private interest, the magistrates had, on many occasions, shown the strongest partiality to the enemies of the king of *Bulgaria*.

Of this, that heroic prince overlooked many instances, in compassion to their folly; but, instead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation

moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far, as to refuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without waiting to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects, by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid by the humbled magistrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions, to be. How my expectations were answered, cannot be explained justly, without a particular account of every thing I saw while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow short, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the rest.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour: for, to  
humble

humble them the more effectually, he had ordered that they should attend himself.

As soon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and, delivering the money to his treasurer, implored his pardon in the most abject terms of submission. 'Arise (said the monarch) and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety; and let this teach you not to mistake moderation for fear another time. But beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates into folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, 'Take (said he) so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country, around their city, and see that it is given to the sufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other; for I war not with the poor, nor would have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the remainder, leave the usual sum upon my table, for my private occasions.'

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (said he) is the submission of the proud! how does guilt humble the conscious heart! These unhappy men, who dared not now to meet our eyes, but hasted with downcast looks from the flash of just indignation; when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preserve the adamant shield of a clear conscience, and terror can never strike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When



When the treasurer went to divide the money among which I lay, according to his master's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his master's pages to lay on the table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatness, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprised to find every thing in a plainness, far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error, and that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independent of, and superior to every adventitious circumstance.

I had not lain long upon his table, when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two across the tent, kneeled down; and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to Heaven.

He then arose with a most serenely chearful countenance, and, coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment, 'O thou source of every evil which distracts this wretched world, (said he) let me not be infected by thy poison; let not my heart conceive a fondness for thee, farther than what thy native value of enabling it to do good, justly entitles thee to: I am yet free from thine infatuation; nor have ever suffered avarice to tempt me to desire thee by improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call my own, which I devote to the divine Author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my distressed fellow creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to observe *my* shape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is there no corner of the earth (said he) where the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wert thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition: but the time is come, when thou openest thine eyes to thy own interest, and feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power of true wisdom! how happy the people who have a good man for their guide!'

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a disguise that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

---

### CHAP. III.

*The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle.*

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprised here, to find every thing as regular and tranquil, as in the best governed city, in the midst of peace!

My master had not walked far, when some conversation, that seemed to be carried on with warmth, in one of the tents, caught his ear: he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it. 'I imagine (said

‘(said a voice within) that we shall have a battle soon: the cheerfulness of the king’s looks, and the more than common spirits he has been in for these few days, are certain signs that he has some great things in view. I always observe him so before a battle.’

‘The sooner it comes the better, (replied another); I only wish that our forces were not so overmatched in numbers: not that I fear success when he is with us, but that we might be able to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the inequality at present, that, while we are killing half of them, the other half escape; and though what we destroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the runaways still remains to give us more trouble. But however, we must only do our duty, and kill them all, one after another.’

‘And so we will, brother, (continued the other), if it please God to preserve our King to us; for, while we have him, we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only increases the glory of vanquishing them. Indeed I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leader. But what attachment should they have to such leaders, who show no regard to their distresses, nor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter; and when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go?’

‘Well, brother, (returned a third voice), thank God that is not our case; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their



‘ occasions. We fight for ourselves and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and restored peace to his people : but if we are to fight to-morrow, we had better take our rest to-night, to make us fresh and strong for the battle : God bless and preserve our King ; while his care watches over us, we can sleep in safety in the midst of our enemies.’

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the King with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eyes. ‘ O my God, (said he, when the voices ceased), enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.’ He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick ; for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself.

The manner in which all things were ordered there for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder ; no negligence or abuse among the attendants ; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients ; all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before !

If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to ecstasy by the behaviour of those victims of the madness of the great ; the thought of having suffered, in his cause, the extremest anguish of pain, nor even the agonies of death, ever making them utter a syllable

to

to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to Heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne; he joined in the general prayer, and hasted from the tender scene as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of every thing in which his orders might be disobeyed, and these his particular family, as he called them, suffer by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent to take his necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except *me*, who happened to stick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conscience, insured his repose: he fell asleep the moment his head touched his pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undismayed heart, and soon reduced the confusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy.

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The King had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion.

- I expected it, (said the King coolly); I knew they
- could not remain long in the situation they were in.
- But let us observe their motions, that we may regulate ours by them.

Then ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where, having observed them attentively for some considerable time,

- It is done, my friends! (said he, with a smile of joy
- that enlightened all his face); it is done! that last
- motion is what we wanted. Let us haste and em-

‘brace the opportunity which Heaven has put into our hands.’—Then, descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and, putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory: the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex, to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall therefore only say, that my master was completely victorious; and to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he made of the rest, rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action, from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance: the field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over; when, cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.



## C H A P. IV.

*The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.*

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that, to a being free from the contradictory phrenses of mankind, the very thought is painful.—His Majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to Heaven, on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers: he praised, he promoted; he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a Prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty to obtain his favour? who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle, the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which, was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a balance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of *glory*, when an unexpected occasion showed me his character in a light that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, ‘*Mercy! O great King! have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and show yourself the substitute of Heaven by impartial justice.*’—The guards and attendants on the King would have spurned the suppliant out of the way; but his Majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and, bidding him arise, ‘*What is the grievance you complain of?*’ (said he, with a placid look and encouraging accent), or against whom do you so solemnly implore justice?

‘*O, great and good King, (replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance), my griefs are too many, to be told so concisely as your present situation demands; and the justice I implore will require time, to divest nature of its strongest passions.*’—‘*What can this mean?*’ (said the Monarch in surprise); meet me directly at my tent, and expect that justice which the simplicity of truth shall be entitled to, without these laboured exclamations.’—The business which his mind was intent upon, prevented the King’s thinking any more of this affair, till he saw the man at his return to his tent; when, calling to him, ‘*Now, (said he), speak your griefs with the boldness, but also with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redress of justice.*’—Encouraged by these words, the stranger, bowing his head, and pausing a moment, as if to support his grief, began thus: ‘*So may the ear of Heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious King, as thou hast readily vouchsafed to hear my cries! so may its justice redress thy wrongs, as thou shalt deal with mine. Thou*

‘*seest*

'seest before thee the most wretched of mankind,  
 'whom despair has reduced to the necessity of flying  
 'from the defence of his country, and imploring  
 'justice for his private wrongs from the declared  
 'foe of my sovereign. But let me not waste your  
 'time with fruitless complaints. My name, though  
 'spoken with some respect in my native country, is  
 'too obscure to have reached your ears, as my an-  
 'cestors wisely confined their virtues to private life,  
 'nor ever laboured to emblazon their names with  
 'titles, that too often mar the happiness of their  
 'owners.

'In their steps I trod, till the wrath of Heaven  
 'kindled the ambition of princes, and my country  
 'became the theatre of their contention. I then  
 'thought it my duty to arise in its defence; and the  
 'justice of my motive drew success on my attempts.  
 'But, while I vainly indulged the hope of being in-  
 'strumental in delivering my country from the hor-  
 'rors of war, a foe broke into my house, thus desti-  
 'tute of its defender, and rifled all the treasure of  
 'my soul. O, my unhappy wife! my newly wed-  
 'ded, beauteous wife! In vain didst thou call upon  
 'me in the hour of thy distress, when the hand of  
 'the ravisher was twisted in thine hair, and the hor-  
 'ror of immediate ruin took possession of thy soul!  
 'Thy protector was away, busied in the defence of  
 'others, while the wolf was ravaging his deserted  
 'fold.

'But whither does my distraction hurry me? O  
 'pardon, gracious Monarch, the inconsistencies of  
 'despair! I will be brief; I will not trespass on thy  
 'precious time.'—He paused then a moment, till a  
 flood of tears eased the fulness of his heart, and then  
 proceeded thus:

'In the irruption of thy trobbs into *Bohemia*, about  
 'six months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party  
 'of them to my house, where the industry of my  
 'ancestors,



‘ ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to the  
‘ wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one mo-  
‘ ment. But I complain not of this. It was my  
‘ share of the indiscriminate calamity. Alas! my  
‘ woes are of another nature.

‘ The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened  
‘ hearts of the soldiers with such reverence, that,  
‘ in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay  
‘ a sacrilegious hand on her: but this safeguard that  
‘ protected her from rapine, only raised the more  
‘ audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who  
‘ commanded the party, no sooner saw her, than, in-  
‘ flamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away with  
‘ him to the camp, where imagination shrinks in hor-  
‘ ror, from the thought of what she may have suf-  
‘ fered.

‘ The news of my misfortune soon reached me;  
‘ no restraints of military duty were of force to hold  
‘ me a moment; I flew to the scene of my ruin,  
‘ where, having learned what I have now related to  
‘ you, the greatness of my grief stupified me for a  
‘ time, till the thought of my wife’s being still alive,  
‘ and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to  
‘ a resolution of labouring for her relief. I there-  
‘ fore immediately entered in disguise into those very  
‘ troops, which had perpetrated my ruin, as I des-  
‘ paired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by  
‘ any other means. My stratagem had success; I  
‘ soon learned that the officer, who had brought my  
‘ wife from my house, had been obliged to give her  
‘ up to his general, who had demanded her, as soon  
‘ as she had been brought to the camp.

‘ A dawn of hope broke in upon me: though I  
‘ could not gain any account of her after this, I  
‘ thought that a man, honoured with your particular  
‘ esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and this I knew  
‘ must be her protection.

‘ Big

' Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my  
 ' own corps, where my absence was easily excused  
 ' to a general who was my friend, and who readily  
 ' yielded to my request of sending a trumpet with a  
 ' letter to enquire for such a lady, and to desire that  
 ' she might be treated with the tenderness and respect  
 ' due to her sex and beauty, till she should be re-  
 ' stored to her friends.

' But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when  
 ' an answer was returned, that the general knew not  
 ' of such a person. Despair now stared me in the  
 ' face; I saw all the horrors of my condition; and  
 ' would that instant have returned in my disguise, and  
 ' stabbed the ravisher at the head of his forces, had  
 ' I not reflected, that my *Theodora* might be only  
 ' exposed by such an action, to new insults, and her  
 ' life perhaps sacrificed, in torture and ignominy, to  
 ' revenge.

' While I fluctuated in this distress, Heaven in-  
 ' spired me with the thought of having recourse to  
 ' your justice. Though he is the enemy of my so-  
 ' vereign, said I, he is a *man*, who feels the tender  
 ' impulse of humanity; he is a *King*, who delights  
 ' in justice! I therefore reassumed my disguise, and  
 ' entered into your camp, as a deserter, the night  
 ' before this battle, in which, instinctive abhor-  
 ' rence of cowardice, urged me to the duty of a  
 ' soldier, and I happened to fight near your person;  
 ' where, though I was sensible of my crime, in  
 ' assisting the enemy of my sovereign, I had this  
 ' palliative consolation, that the forces I engaged  
 ' were not my fellow subjects, but those of a per-  
 ' fidious ally, who entered into the war only to take  
 ' his own advantage, when a proper opportunity  
 ' should offer.

' This, O gracious King, is my unhappy story;  
 ' this is the grievance for which I implore thy jus-  
 ' tice; for which I fought against the allies of my  
 ' sovereign

sovereign yesterday; for which I threw myself before your horse's feet this morning; for which I now call upon you by that power, who has placed you as his substitute on earth, and will require an account of thy stewardship. O justice! justice! justice!

---

## CHAP. V.

*The King sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the King's fortitude and activity of soul.*

THE King heard out the stranger's story without interruption, and then addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy (said he) is the condition of princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their servants, as if every man's own were not more than he can bear.

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave; I thought justice and mercy attempered valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged; let us not judge too hastily. Go, (turning to one of his officers) bid him come to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion: if he is guilty, he has forfeited my esteem for ever; but if this complaint is only a calumny, devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice, which he so solemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken into custody, till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity, which his apparent distress stands in need of; nor let any hardship or indignity, give justice the appearance



‘pearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution.’

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His Majesty’s commands were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity; and having conferred with him, for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: ‘It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war, should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the strictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty, or ill treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What then must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed? to find, that the ruins of the poor, mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to heaven against me? But these enormities shall not ly on my head, for neglect of punishing them; nor be persisted in, on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand guilty of such crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind.’

The solemnity with which the King spoke these words, struck all present with terror for *the accused*, who alone was ignorant of their design. The King saw the general concern; and, to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded: then, turning short upon the general, with a determined look, and awful voice, ‘Tell me

‘ (said he) where is the woman, whom thou hadst  
 ‘ from the officer who brought her to the camp, when  
 ‘ the forces under thy command entered into *Bo-*  
 ‘ *hemia*? the woman whom the *Bohemian* general sent  
 ‘ to inquire after in vain, and whom, I fear, thou  
 ‘ didst deny, and still detainest, for purposes too base  
 ‘ to mention?’

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind: he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress with the greatest concern; but, superior to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character, ‘ Tell  
 ‘ me where she is this instant!’ (said he) nor aggravate by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant; for  
 ‘ I will know the whole of this black affair.’

‘ O sire! (replied the general, throwing himself  
 ‘ at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot  
 ‘ bear thy wrath: let me die this moment; let that  
 ‘ punishment expiate my guilt; but afflict me no longer  
 ‘ with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I  
 ‘ can bear.’—‘ Where is the woman? speak!’—‘ Safe  
 ‘ and inviolate in my tent. My intreaties have not  
 ‘ been able to prevail on her virtue; and my passion  
 ‘ was too delicate to seek gratification by force.’—  
 ‘ This moment let her be sent for! and let the cause  
 ‘ of her coming be concealed from her: I will learn  
 ‘ the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the  
 ‘ mean time, let her husband be treated with tenderness  
 ‘ and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion.’

The King had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.—‘ Thy will be done,  
 ‘ O God, (said the King) thy will be done.’—And then,

then, without any appearance of surprise, or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command, to march to the reinforcement of that which had suffered this loss; and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his several orders accordingly, for he was his own secretary.

But though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this misfortune: 'O God (said he, as soon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeased? When shall this people have rest? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but spare them! There is nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a wise man's care or regard: the victory with which it pleased thee to bless our arms so lately, raised my hopes to a prospect of peace. But the scene is now changed; and this advantage will raise the pride and malice of our enemies still higher, and make new deluges of blood necessary, to bring them to a sense of reason and justice. Thy will be done, O Lord; but as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make use of the means which thou hast put into our power, to accomplish that end, which appears to us most just and advantageous. The horrors of war are ready to burst upon my country, after all my endeavours to save it, and divert them elsewhere. But they shall not, unopposed; I myself will stand in the breach, and defend my native country.'

The serenity in the looks of the King, had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greatest alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occasioned neither disorder nor confusion. Active as light, the King *was* every where, *ordered* every thing, *saw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his soldiers, as for the greatest possible expedition of  
 O 2 their



their march. His armies might be vanquished, for they were but men; but to deject or disorder his mind, was not in the power of any event.

---

## CHAP. VI.

*Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives, and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of BULGARIA, and the probable consequences of the war.*

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the King ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The first sight of this woman raised emotions in his heart, which it had long been a stranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible, that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity, both for the unfortunate general, and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent astonishment; but recollecting himself soon, he addressed her thus, with the highest complacency and respect in his look and accent. 'I have sent for you, madam, to this important place, for the deliverance of your sex, to learn from yourself, the manner of your having been brought away from *Bohemia*, and the cause of your being since detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam; have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit? speak with the assurance of truth, and expect justice and redress.'

'O mighty king, (said the lady, prostrating herself at his feet) oft have I heard of thy wondrous

drous virtues ; but never till this moment could I  
 think, that you could stoop so low, as to take no-  
 tice of my wretchedness. My sad story is no more  
 than this : I was torn from my house by an officer  
 of your army ; I was hurried away to the camp by  
 him, and there insulted by the offers of his love :  
 but Heaven delivered me from him. Your general  
 heard of my distress, and rescued me from his pow-  
 er : since which time I have had no personal cause  
 of complaint, beside the indiscriminate calamity of  
 the wars, which have robbed me of my husband,  
 and left me a friendless widow in the hands of mine  
 enemies.—A flood of tears here stopped her utter-  
 ance.

The king raising her from the ground, proceeded  
 thus : ‘ A widow, madam, did you say ? how long  
 since you have lost your husband, and by what  
 means did you hear of his death ?’

‘ O Sire ! (replied she) as soon as I was freed from  
 the horrors of brutal violence by the general, I  
 wrote to my husband with his permission, but re-  
 ceived no answer to many, very many letters. This  
 suspense was worse than death, and almost drove  
 me to despair ; till the general at length, in com-  
 passion to my misery, wrote himself to the comman-  
 der of the army in which my husband had ser-  
 ved, who returned him for answer, that he had  
 been killed about the time I was taken prisoner.

‘ O ! happy had been my lot, had I shared his fate !’

‘ I hope, madam, (said the King), you have re-  
 ceived no injuries, that make you weary of life :  
 I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to-  
 you ?’

‘ O Sire ! (replied she), I have received no in-  
 juries, beside the irreparable loss of my husband,  
 after which I can have no desire to live. As for  
 the general, he has always treated me with the  
 greatest compassion and tenderness. But now will

' your Majesty hear the voice of affliction? Will you  
 ' grant the only wish of an heart in despair? Let me  
 ' be conveyed to some religious house, where I may  
 ' devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of  
 ' Heaven, far from the knowledge of the general, and  
 ' every other person who has ever heard of my name.  
 ' I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you  
 ' with this request: but to whom should we fly in  
 ' the moment of distress, except to Heaven or its  
 ' viceregents, especially those whose virtues give its  
 ' seal to their authority?

' You may depend (returned the King) upon eve-  
 ' ry endeavour in my power to make you happy.  
 ' But, madam, what meant the particular mention  
 ' of the general, in your desire of being retired from  
 ' the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous:  
 ' I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own  
 ' virtue, and my command?

' O, Sire! (replied she), mistake not the incohe-  
 ' rences of distraction: the general has always treat-  
 ' ed me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in  
 ' excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the  
 ' only thing my soul could disapprove in his behavi-  
 ' our. He offered me honourable love; but, alas,  
 ' my husband! my dear husband, has possession of  
 ' this heart! there he is buried! nor ever shall an-  
 ' other love disturb his dear remembrance!

' Madam, be comforted, (returned the King);  
 ' such virtue as yours is, the particular care of Hea-  
 ' ven: you may be happy yet; your husband may  
 ' be still alive; in the disorders of these unhappy  
 ' times, many strange things happen; many who are  
 ' thought to be alive, are long since dead; many  
 ' who have been long thought to be dead, are found  
 ' to be alive.'—' O Sire! what can your words im-  
 ' port? you would not jest with misery! you cannot  
 ' speak in vain! O, am I yet to hope, after so long  
 ' despair?



‘despair?’—‘Hope! always hope! but I shall send  
‘a proper person to explain my words.’

Saying this, the King went to the door of his tent,  
and, seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and  
impatience, he called him; ‘Go (said he) in there,  
‘and see what blessings Heaven reserves for virtue;  
‘go in alone: such meltings of the soul as must at-  
‘tend your meeting, are too delicate to be exposed  
‘to other eyes.’

‘Then turning to the general, ‘You have behaved  
‘nobly, my friend, (said he), in such temptation,  
‘which was almost too great for human virtue: had  
‘you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my  
‘heart, your life should have expiated the crime:  
‘But you have behaved nobly; in such a trial, it is  
‘virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have  
‘fallen into, are but the weaknesses of nature; for to  
‘have been insensible to her beauty and perfections,  
‘would have argued a deficiency in humanity.—  
‘But beware, my friend, of indulging those pas-  
‘sions; they enervate the heart, and wean the soul  
‘insensibly from virtue: the example is before thine  
‘eyes: see how the violence of love has been able to  
‘urge the noble heart of this woman’s husband to  
‘defeat his charge, to enter into the service of his  
‘enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own  
‘conscience: think of this, and be more cautious  
‘for the future; the heart of a soldier has not room  
‘for love.’

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at  
his feet, and embraced his knees. ‘I understand  
‘you, (said the King, smiling); your passion is not  
‘quite cured; but you shall have employment to  
‘wear off this rust of idleness: return to your com-  
‘mand this moment, and expect my farther orders.’

The general obeyed; and the King, addressing  
those around him, ‘To be without fault, (said he),  
‘were not to be a man; he is the best, who has the  
‘smallest;

' smallest ; and allowance is to be made for human  
' frailty, where the temptation is too great for hu-  
' man virtue.'

As the King said this, the stranger and his wife  
came out together, and, throwing themselves at his  
feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful ecstasy.

' Arise, (said the Monarch), and be happy in each  
' other. I have restored you your wife, (said he to  
' the husband), and am ready to do you every far-  
' ther instance of justice which you can demand.'

' My soul is satisfied, O gracious King ! my soul  
' is satisfied, (replied he) : I ask no more of Heaven,  
' but to reward your goodness, your justice, and com-  
' passion.'

' But there is one thing more to be considered,  
' (said the King) ; your estate was wasted, your  
' houses burned by my soldiers. I do not know the  
' loss you may have suffered. Take this, (giving him  
' a large purse of gold) ; if that is not sufficient to  
' repair it, when Heaven, in mercy to mankind, shall  
' bid the calamities of war to cease, if my life is  
' spared, come to me, and I will remove every cause  
' of your complaint. I do not ask you to enter into  
' my service in this war ; but if your honour, your  
' conscience oppose it not, you may expect every en-  
' couragement due to your merit.'

' O Sire ! it is too much ! your goodness over-  
' whelms me ! I will retire from the seat of war : I  
' will implore Heaven for your happiness and safety ;  
' and though I cannot, may not fight for you, my  
' arm shall never more be raised against you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their  
departure, leaving the King no less happy, in being  
the author of their happiness, than his goodness and  
bounty had made them.—I here quitted the service  
of this great Prince, being in the purse which he  
gave to the stranger. The happiness which this pair  
experienced, in being thus unexpectedly restored to  
cath.

each other, is not to be expressed; the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the sensuality of other scenes was beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wished for nothing more; and, to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclesiastic in *Vienna*, till the war should be at an end, and they might with safety return to their own country. This resolution was soon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of such a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this Prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him; but I must not gratify your curiosity. What I have told you of his actions, may convince you that he is the greatest of men: but humanity is too frail, to be able to form any definitive judgment, from his past, of his future life. Success may elevate, misfortune may sour his mind, and so overthrow that equality of it, which now raises him almost above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly to be relied on; so that his dependence is solely on the attachment of his own subjects, on the strength of his own soul.

What will be the event of his fortune, is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I must say, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a foe, (*the Turk*), whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to



put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

## CHAP. VII.

*CHRYSA* arrives in *VIENNA*, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in *ENGLAND*. He is sent to *PERU*. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to *EUROPE* to prepare matters better.

**I**F the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing, in the fields and high roads, of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed, from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastic, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified ; for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree, on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus :

‘ It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various have been the climates I have gone through ; various the vicissitudes of my fortune since that day : from despair to exultation ; from royal affluence and power, to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my words : I will explain them to you in a short view of my life, which it is necessary I should give you, to prepare you for the participation of secrets, in which your assistance may be employed, in establishing the most extensive and firm power which ever yet was raised on this globe.—You may remember, though you were then very young, that the representation of the *Jesuit*, to whose care our education was committed, made such an impression upon me, that, in despite of my father's threats and intreaties, I renounced my patrimony in your favour, and, taking only a small sum of money to defray the expences of my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my tutor, where I readily obtained admission into the *Society of Jesus*, as soon as I had gone through the usual preparatory forms of education.

‘ Nothing remarkable happened to me during the first years of my being professed, my studies engrossing my whole time and attention, in which I made such a proficiency, that the general of the order thought it proper to send me into the world in the service of the society.

‘ The first stage of my mission was to *England*, whither I went, to counteract the poison which was dispensing against us by an apostate of our order, who, under the pretence of employing his abilities

‘ in

in the service of the society, had been admitted to  
 all the libraries, and suffered to take extracts from  
 all the records of the church. But no sooner had  
 he made such a collection as he thought sufficient  
 for his purpose, than he fled to *England*, his native  
 country, where, renouncing his vows and religion,  
 he turned the weapons which had been entrusted  
 in his hands, for the defence of the church, against  
 her, employing the abstracts he had made, to the  
 defamation of the character, and subversion of the  
 power of the *Holy See*.

My success in this my first negociation, (for in  
 defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and common  
 sense, by plausible insinuations, by forged certifi-  
 cates, or, which was the same thing, by certificates  
 from people who would certify any thing in their  
 own favour, against a man who attacked the very  
 fundamentals of their power; by bribery, suborna-  
 tion, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great  
 measure, defeated his design, and overturned the  
 authority of his work); my success, I say, in this  
 difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from a-  
 mong ourselves, and was versed in our whole sci-  
 ence, encouraged the order to continue me in that  
 mission, but in an higher office.

The laws, religion, and government of the na-  
 tion, were now the objects assigned to my attacks,  
 in which I laboured with various success for some  
 years, in every character which human volubility  
 could assume. I was a quaker, a methodist, a  
 deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the go-  
 vernment, as the prevailing humour of the day pro-  
 mised attention to my writings; the sea which  
 flows around that island being not more unsteady  
 than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable  
 to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they by  
 every breath of popular rumour.

I proceeded



‘ I proceeded thus for some time with various success, till, happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissension between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both; the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

‘ My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order; on the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

‘ I was therefore sent the next year to what is called *the Spanish world*, but is really *the Jesuits* heaven in *America*, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution.—When I came there, I found things in a forwardness too great for their foundation, the eagerness of some of our people hurrying on events, before proper preparation had insured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from *Spain* and *Portugal*, before they had made provision to support themselves in such an attempt. They wanted European officers, soldiers, arms, and ammunition; for on the natives there is no dependence; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part, were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

‘ I therefore counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a more

‘ favourable minute, should make their success more  
 ‘ probable. But they would not hearken to my ad-  
 ‘ vice, but attributed it to envy, or want of resolu-  
 ‘ tion; on which I left them to their own ill fortune,  
 ‘ and hastened home, to provide a remedy for evils  
 ‘ which I could not prevent.’

---

### CHAP. VIII.

*Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the  
 promising situation of his affairs at present. The  
 concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL  
 are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He  
 proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he  
 may accomplish his particular design.*

‘ **T**HE event has confirmed my opinion: by  
 ‘ striking too soon, the blow has been ineffec-  
 ‘ tual. But things, however disconcerted by this  
 ‘ precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may  
 ‘ yet repair the effects of their folly.

‘ In this cause I now labour, in concert with o-  
 ‘ thers of my brethren, in every court of *Europe*;  
 ‘ and I have the satisfaction to think that we have  
 ‘ a prospect of success. The only obstacle that  
 ‘ retards us at present, is the difficulty of making  
 ‘ the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into the  
 ‘ war against *England*. Could we bring this to  
 ‘ bear, our work would be easy. The mighty na-  
 ‘ val power of *England*, will not only prevent  
 ‘ their sending over forces to oppress us, before we  
 ‘ can establish our power, but will also assist us to  
 ‘ carry on the war, to share in the spoil, and distress  
 ‘ their enemies.

‘ But while the present kings are on the thrones  
 ‘ of those kingdoms, it will scarcely be possible to  
 ‘ bring

‘ bring our designs to perfection, they are so utterly  
 ‘ ly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war,  
 ‘ with a nation from whose alliance they receive such  
 ‘ advantages.—The first thing, therefore, which we  
 ‘ do, must be to remove them. The former has already  
 ‘ ready swallowed his death, though the process  
 ‘ will be so slow as to escape suspicion: with the other,  
 ‘ such caution is not necessary, nor is there time  
 ‘ for it.

‘ The arm is already lifted against him, for a  
 ‘ stroke that will terrify the world.

‘ When these obstacles are removed, the execution  
 ‘ of our designs will meet with no farther delay. The  
 ‘ successors to those princes we have secured such an  
 ‘ influence on, that we can work them to whatever we  
 ‘ please, and have already poisoned their minds with  
 ‘ prejudices against *England* \*.

‘ To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience  
 ‘ to command our forces, is the next object of our care.  
 ‘ Shall I candidly own to you, that such a length of time,  
 ‘ and multiplicity of affairs had almost obliterated all  
 ‘ the remembrance of my family: but, the moment I  
 ‘ heard your name mentioned, with the respect due to  
 ‘ your merits in the present war, a flood of infant  
 ‘ fondness melted my heart, and tears of tenderest  
 ‘ joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I immediately  
 ‘ gave notice to our general, and, by his order, am  
 ‘ empowered to treat thus with you.

‘ On my engagement for your fidelity, for your  
 ‘ abilities are known to be far superior to any that  
 ‘ shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you  
 ‘ the supreme command of all our forces in this  
 ‘ great undertaking. With what joy I make this

P 2

offer,

\* The conduct of the present King of *Spain*, hitherto, shews  
 that the Jesuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at least.



‘ offer, the pleasure that you would feel in serving  
 ‘ your brother, can best enable you to judge.

‘ Though I will tell you farther, that mine is  
 ‘ raised higher than common feelings can convey a  
 ‘ notion of. I have hitherto unfolded only the  
 ‘ general design of our order, in which I am but a  
 ‘ party, though a principal and material one. But  
 ‘ shall I tell you also, that my designs terminate not  
 ‘ with their’s: as your command will make you mas-  
 ‘ ter of all their force, and as power is the con-  
 ‘ sequence of that, you will be able to confer it  
 ‘ where you please; or, indeed, rather to retain it  
 ‘ in your own hands, while I shall only ease you of  
 ‘ the trouble of conducting and establishing the policy  
 ‘ of an infant state.

‘ This was my motive for writing to you, so pres-  
 ‘ singly, to come to me to *Vienna*. This is the end  
 ‘ which I have been labouring for all my life. I am  
 ‘ advanced in years, and shall never marry to beget  
 ‘ an heir: you are young, and will have many. Assist  
 ‘ me therefore to acquire a throne, which must de-  
 ‘ scend to your posterity; a throne, which, by hold-  
 ‘ ing it at first, as under the sovereignty of the order,  
 ‘ will soon be established by them, even beyond their  
 ‘ own power to shake.

‘ I have now unbosomed myself to my brother,  
 ‘ with all the confidence of so near an alliance. You  
 ‘ will perhaps wonder at my openness, with one  
 ‘ whom I have not seen since he was a child. But I  
 ‘ know your character in life: and, above all, I  
 ‘ know myself safe from being betrayed, because the  
 ‘ information would not be received.

‘ Consider, therefore, whether you will embrace  
 ‘ this offer; whether you will reign in a splendour  
 ‘ that would dazzle the eyes of the greatest prince  
 ‘ in Europe, or live here in slavery and dependence.  
 ‘ The alternative will not admit a moment’s hesitation.  
 ‘ I see you yield. I will acquaint our general with  
 ‘ it;

- it; you and your wife shall remain here with me,
- till the proper time for all our departure comes,
- which will depend on circumstances not yet settled.
- In the mean time, we shall have an opportunity of
- conferring on these subjects together, and preparing
- all things for our undertaking, in a manner that
- shall ensure success.'

Though my master made no reply to this proposal, that testified the least disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme affected him with the strongest abhorrence; at the same time that the offer of royalty, was a temptation that shook his resolution, and almost vanquished his virtue.

His brother saw the conflict in his soul with pleasure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul; and the struggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman who deliberates between virtue and vice, is lost.

---

## CHAP. IX.

*The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in Germany, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.*

THE Jesuit the next morning resumed the conversation; and, to remove every doubt of success that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus:

- My brother, (said he) there is nothing so disgust-
- ing to a rational man, as the mistakes and blunders
- which passion, prejudice, pride and ignorance, pro-

duce, in the conduct of all the courts in the world,  
 even ours at *Rome* not being quite exempt from  
 them, though the freest of all others. As for this  
 of *Vienna*, it is at present a scene, where every  
 absurd, every destructive passion rules.—Among  
 these must you seek for the sources of the present  
 war, that lays all *Germany* waste: Female pride,  
 piqued by some slighting expressions, from one es-  
 teemed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire  
 of recovering by surprise, what had been yielded,  
 or rather extorted by treaty, influenced this sa-  
 gacious court, in conjunction with that of *Saxony*,  
 to form designs against the king of *Bulgaria*: but  
 the vigilance of that monarch prevented their de-  
 signs, of which he had timely notice; and, before  
 their schemes were ripe for execution, he boldly  
 attacked them, and so anticipated the blow medi-  
 tated against him.

So daring a step surpris'd all *Europe*, and influen-  
 ced many, who were unacquainted with the motives  
 of it, to take part against him, while more did it  
 for private advantage.—Of these, *France* was the  
 first; who, concluding a league with her ancient  
 enemy, in despite of family animosity, has enter-  
 ed into a war, that seems not to concern her at all;  
 nor indeed does it in the obvious consequences of it:  
 but she has farther designs in view, and, in return  
 for the assistance she gives to crush this prince, is to  
 receive from the house of *Austria* those dominions  
 in the *Netherlands*, which have cost the greatest part  
 of *Europe* such deluges of blood, for above a cen-  
 tury, to keep out of her hands; while this court,  
 inattentive to the consequences that must attend  
*France's* getting possession of these long-contested  
 places, has blindly, basely entered into a league  
 with a family, that has been labouring her ruin for  
 so many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all  
 the states who have supported her in them. The  
 other



other nations who have acceded to this alliance, have acted from motives merely mercenary in the first view, fighting for the pay promised them by the *Imperial* and *French* courts, the latter of whom has stretched her generosity so far, as to undertake supporting her new ally with money, as well as men.

But it is not improbable, that they may all be disappointed, and the king of *Bulgaria* not only escape the ruin meditated against him, but also retort it on the machinators; one of the principal of whom, the *Saxon*, has already had abundant cause to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris & focis*, as may be said; for if that hero is victorious, nothing less is to be expected here, than the total loss of the imperial dignity, of whose authority there want not many instances of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution.

But of all the effects of this most unnatural combination, there is not one more base, than the ingratitude with which this court has behaved to that of *England*, whose blood and treasure have often supported it against the power of *France*, when every other human assistance had deserted it; and established it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin.—But now, all those benefits are forgot; and because *England* will not tamely look on, (if not perhaps assist) to see the fabric, which she has erected at so vast an expence, overturned to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her by blood and interest, sacrificed to avarice and pride, all her former services are held as cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour of the greatest enemy.

While *England* thus supports her character of generosity, and acts with prudence; the *Dutch*, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the barrier, which cost themselves even so much in erecting for their defence,

defence, thus given away to every power against  
 whom it was erected, and who, they cannot be  
 insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as  
 soon as it can strike the blow to effect. But such is  
 the degeneracy of that people from every senti-  
 ment of virtue, public and private, that they will  
 not give up the opportunity of present gain, to save  
 their state from so evident, so imminent ruin; vain-  
 ly perhaps expecting, that *England* will still pur-  
 sue the schemes of *knight-errantry*, which have so  
 long made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours,  
 while they themselves looked on almost as if uncon-  
 cerned in the event; and will be moved by the cries  
 of the *distressed states*, to remedy the mistakes, and  
 repair the losses of their *High Mightinesses*.

While every other state in *Europe* is thus employ-  
 ed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the advantages of  
 peace, prudently taking no part in a war which  
 does not in the least concern them. Of these, the  
 former, like the old lion in the fable, is only ter-  
 rible to ignorant apprehension, on account of what  
 it has been; and is now pacific and harmless, because  
 it no longer has the power of doing harm. Sensi-  
 ble of this weakness, it sleeps in the shadow of a  
 mighty name, and mixes not in disputes which must  
 only draw it into difficulties, without any prospect  
 of advantage to engage it in the attempt. But it  
 must not be left to enjoy this state of tranquillity, so  
 contrary to our designs, any longer; and as the  
 present government there is determined to persist in  
 the measures that support it, it must be overturned  
 to make way for those who will be more obedient  
 to our advice.

A method which we must also pursue with *Por-  
 tugal*; for though its strength is almost beneath the  
 rank of an independent, much less a royal state,  
 yet, upon the account of its wealth, which might  
 hire forces to oppress us, it must be worked up to  
 take

‘ take the same step, and break with *England*, as I  
 ‘ have said before, to which it has already made  
 ‘ large advances, by several most unjust and injudi-  
 ‘ cious encroachments on the trade of that nation.

‘ As for the war between *France* and *England*, it  
 ‘ arises solely from the contradiction between the in-  
 ‘ terests of the two nations, which nature has set in  
 ‘ an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the  
 ‘ seat of this war is so remote from hence, that it  
 ‘ would have no influence on the affairs of *Europe*,  
 ‘ did not the successes of the *English* prevent *France*  
 ‘ from giving the assistance that was expected, and  
 ‘ might be effectual to the designs of this court; for  
 ‘ they have so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is  
 ‘ no longer able to fulfil her engagements with *Russia*  
 ‘ particularly, and the several courts of *Germany*,  
 ‘ whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quar-  
 ‘ rel of her ally; so that the former, who had no  
 ‘ other motive but the money, for entering into the  
 ‘ war at first, will of course, and the latter must of  
 ‘ necessity, desert that cause, not having any internal  
 ‘ support of their own, since this has failed them.  
 ‘ Indeed the *Russians*, finding all the mighty promises  
 ‘ which were made them vanish into air, begin to be  
 ‘ sick of their bargain already, and long again for  
 ‘ the solid advantages of their alliance with *England*.  
 ‘ As for this court, it is now making its last effort;  
 ‘ and if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other re-  
 ‘ source, than shamefully to receive law from a  
 ‘ Prince, upon whom it made so unjust an attempt.’



## C H A P. X.

*Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSAL changes his service.*

THIS short but distinct view of the present situation of the affairs of *Europe*, must convince you, that a general peace must soon be concluded, the parties that would, not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore we must be speedy in the execution of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost: for it would be impossible to make even the pride of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the measures we want, at a time when *England* is disengaged from any other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to show you, that our designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubt of success.—But there is one thing more which must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the justice of it, and of the means designed to accomplish its success.—

Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them with impunity. Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness by every means within his power. This is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion, by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

But

‘ But that it is really the truth, and, as such, made  
 ‘ the rule of action by all the states and princes in  
 ‘ the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by  
 ‘ any one, who has considered the system of policy  
 ‘ and government which are, and ever have been e-  
 ‘ stablished by them.

‘ For, if it was not an undoubted maxim, that  
 ‘ power constitutes the rule of justice, how inconsis-  
 ‘ tent would be the actions of all mankind ! How  
 ‘ could a state devise laws to punish a man with death,  
 ‘ who goes into his neighbour’s field and steals his  
 ‘ ox, and, at the same time, sends armies to invade,  
 ‘ spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neigh-  
 ‘ bours ? How could a poor pirate be hanged for  
 ‘ robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after  
 ‘ sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the same  
 ‘ nation ? If a state of war is alleged, that is the  
 ‘ very imposition of which I spoke. Every man has  
 ‘ as good a *natural* right to declare war with his  
 ‘ neighbour, as the state he lives in has with another  
 ‘ state ; and every right that is not natural, is an usur-  
 ‘ pation, and void. This is the true philosophy of  
 ‘ life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and  
 ‘ selfish misrepresentations of design.

‘ As for religion, look over the whole race of  
 ‘ mankind, and try if you can find one who practises  
 ‘ what he professes : this is an incontestible proof  
 ‘ that none believe it ; as it is also, that there is no  
 ‘ necessity they should, else would the want of faith  
 ‘ and obedience be punished by that power which is  
 ‘ thought to enjoin them ; whereas, on the contrary,  
 ‘ it is always most successful, as it affords means  
 ‘ which those restraints forbid. I observed, that, in  
 ‘ the beginning of the conversation on this subject,  
 ‘ you seemed shocked at my mentioning the necessity  
 ‘ of removing the persons who opposed our designs,  
 ‘ and particularly when I said, the *Spaniard* had  
 ‘ swallowed his death. But this is all prejudice,  
 ‘ and

‘ and want of extending your view beyond the surface of things.

‘ For, how much better is the method we take, of striking the single person against whom our design is levelled, than that pursued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the innocent with the guilty, (innocent I mean in respect to us), and laying waste whole nations, to bring a prince to death? How much better would it have been for this court to have removed the King of *Bulgaria* by poison, or a dagger, than to have destroyed millions, as they have done, in the pursuit of his death, by this destructive war? This is demonstration! This is conviction to him who dares open his eyes to see it! Judge now of *our* undertaking by this invariable system, and show me one objection to it.’

This long dissertation was not delivered at one time; it was the substance of many conversations, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his brother, that he resigned himself wholly to his disposal, and entered sincerely into his designs. The whole objection he made, (and that was not urged against him), was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the society, the prejudice of education being still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely, as to consider assassination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, (for my master never stirred out, as he made sickness his excuse for quitting the service), when his brother, having occasion for some money to send to *Lisbon* on the grand design, the bag, in which I was, was ordered for that service, the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my master again, and set out for *Lisbon*, in the possession of one  
of



of the society, who was to deliver us to a particular person there.

---

## CHAP. XI.

*CHRYSAI proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of GERMANY. A short view of the war between the FRENCH and ENGLISH, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it into GERMANY. Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment.*

**I**N so complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person by whom I was sent to *Lisbon*, was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at several places in his way, to see that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumstances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences upon such occasions: I shall therefore take notice only of such few, as, for their singularity and importance, may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey, (for that alleged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order), it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say, that every thing exceeded expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all *Germany*, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in with some of the armies which were then in the field; but this

gave him no concern: he was blessed with one of those ready geniuses, that can put on any appearance so naturally, as to deceive suspicion itself; beside that, he had passports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The first event worth remark that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and its operations in general, have been sufficiently explained before), was in the army of the allies of the King of *Bulgaria*, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller *German* states, (who are hired by the *English*, to defend their own liberties), a small number of *Bulgarians*, and a considerable body of *English* troops.

You are surprised to hear, that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves in so interesting a cause; but so it is, and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings; for, as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expence, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have indeed this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alleging, that, as their ruin would involve greater states in some inconveniencies, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised, (and this not by poorer princes alone; the *Austrians* and *Spaniards* occasionally, and the *Dutch* constantly availing themselves of it), that *England* in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her situation,

situation, she seemed exempt by Heaven, in every war that has distracted *Europe* for some ages, and put to an expence of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much farther, involve it in the very ruin it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itself shall work its own redress: a period, that, to human foresight, seems not far distant at present. This is taking away the power of those petty tyrants, who disgrace the name of sovereigns, and uniting their territories into one state, of strength sufficient to support itself. For while those princes have any power left, they will, consistently with their present systems of policy, oppose this; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves, in this present war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to resist, but must passively submit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their support: an event as much to be desired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus suffer by their absurd iniquitous conduct; as the severest form of one government, is preferable to the capricious rule of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight; that boasted liberty being, at present, no more than the power of those sovereigns, to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which within just bounds, would really be establishing, not overturning the liberty of mankind.



As to the war in which the *English* were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the *French*, had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in *America*, where they already possessed an hundred times more than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the *English* in that part of the globe, were also uselessly extensive: however, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state: besides, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might in time possibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred by the *English* to the place in which the attack was made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the *French* power in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world where the *French* had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impossible for the *French* to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice, which first gave occasion to the war, were now strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the seat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their assistance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for those territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land forces, and the alliances they knew they

they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hope of accomplishing; a scheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the *English* to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely on their account. As the *French*, at the same time that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could possibly spare, to the army raised by the *English* upon this indispensable occasion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies; beside a considerable assistance in money, to enable him to support his own troops.

It was necessary for me to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it composed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* general, in disgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit, equal to such a charge, in the natives; though, to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the *English*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the *German* commander in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconvenience they were meant

to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the *English* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with which they were joined, with contempt, who, in return, affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country, to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in provisions, with that care and cheerfulness, which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means they suffered the inconveniences of scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them, were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give success to their designs. The commander in chief either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented, by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of these misunderstandings; and the *English* commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command, which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the *English*, inflamed them by every artifice he could use.

Nor did he stop here: whenever he was summoned in consequence of his high station, for he was second in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his constant practice to contradict whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himself in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war, whereas  
the



the commander was a thoughtful, reserved man, of few words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed, than explained his designs.

The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to discuss the affair with his worthy antagonist, written directly to the *British* sovereign, to inform him that he was so constantly opposed in all his designs by the *English* general, that it was impossible for him to do any thing of moment: wherefore he desired, either that he might have leave to resign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous opposition; concluding his letter with these remarkable words—

• Though in a multitude of counsellors there is said to be much safety; yet in the operations of war, if many are privy to the councils which direct them, there never can be that secrecy, agreement and dispatch, which are indispensibly necessary to success.’—

The monarch, who was no stranger to the capricious and unquiet disposition of the *English* general, was sensible of the justice of the *German*’s complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as should appear best to his own private judgment, without consulting with, or being liable to be opposed by any other person.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the *English* general, would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *English* government made this not quite so proper; as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families of the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his talent for speaking gave him such weight, that it was judged best, to avoid giving him cause for exerting his abilities in opposition to the

the measures of government, by removing him from an employment which he had solicited with all his power and interest; especially as the immense expence of this army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impressi<sup>o</sup>n against it. But the event shewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes without ever consulting any person, or ever communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he sent his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke upon the *English* general, who had been accustomed to canvass the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook such subordination to a person whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolving to seize the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to attack him in the *British* senate, at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to have him removed from the command, which must of course devolve upon himself.

This account my master received from a Jesuit, the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with the *French* king, and secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered into the service of the *English* general, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.

## C H A P. XII.

*A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy ENGLISH soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.*

THE very morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all Europe. The French army was so greatly superior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defensive, nor had his consummate experience, and indefatigable assiduity, been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But, through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy, that indicated a design of attacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them *English*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, whilst he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army, to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops, soon changed the face of the affair; for, not content with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with such irresistible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have



I have said before, that the transactions in a battle are so complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description; I shall therefore enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the *English* general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he sent to the *English* general, who commanded all the horse in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry under his command to their assistance. Surprise and resentment, at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason; but he recovered himself in a moment, and, drawing his sword, with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but with some variation.

This the general instantly perceived, and resolved to take the advantage of, to justify his obeying neither; in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers about this difference in their orders; and finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general for an explanation of them; thereby trifling

trifling away the critical moment ; in which manner he expected, that the part of the allied army which was engaged, would be beaten for want of a proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army from a defeat ; and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext, to abandon them to ruin.

The situation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool distant reception he met with, gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head : and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations which he had intended to bring against his general, would now recoil upon him with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publicly passed an implicit censure on his conduct, which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper to resign his command, for fear of personal insult from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the interest of his family, and his own eloquence and address, would vindicate his character, at least, if not still accomplish his designs against the general.

Though

Though I lost sight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of this whole affair, I think it better, and less troublesome to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct, was, that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to those under his command gave no small weight to, from this generally just maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*, and which many insignificant parts of his former conduct were alleged to confirm: but I have shown, that it sprung from another much less justifiable cause; I say less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for, than for his being born blind or lame; but such a scheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army, was a perfect harmony between the *English* and *Germans*, the glory they had acquired upon this occasion raising the spirits of the former so high, that they thought no more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved; and entered into friendship with their fellow soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them; who, on the other hand, were so struck with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country, as before. But what completed the happiness of the *English*, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory, under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which, they esteemed a sufficient recompence for the severest



severest fatigues and dangers : an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being exposed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not do any service.

As soon as the late general arrived in *England*, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service ; an instance of clemency which few other princes would have shown, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him.

But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity, or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest point : however, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but, waving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the trial demanded ; but with this express declaration, that, as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight ; for the general was well advised, before he solicited the trial, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as these only made a *Briton* subject to military law, by which he must be tried ; and this exemption was the real reason of his being so eager for a trial.

But, though his life might be out of danger by this subterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character, beyond all possibility of recovery; as, upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of so favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war by that means, appeared so plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the service was not only asserted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell a second time a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general lost the glory which, in the first emotions of joy and admiration, had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it: and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan for such an improbable instance of bravery as that which obtained it.

---

## CH A P. XII.

CHRYSALE arrives at BRUSSELS. *The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdote of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.*

AS soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over, and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and, throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had borne there, pursued his journey to *Brussels* in his own, where he was to receive farther instructions: for, though *the great design* was carried

on

on by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of *the old man of the mountain*.

It was some time before these instructions arrived, which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the governor, who, beside the advantage of that character to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure, in the most extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification; though he had the address to maintain the dignity of his station by his secrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes so much to the influence, which the Jesuits possess over the minds of people, as the knowledge of the secret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without disguise. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves in a convenient situation to see all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being overheard: such as was merely political, I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.—‘Observe that ‘little mean looking, ill-formed person,’ (said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) ‘who acts as master of ‘the ceremonies. You see his feeble frame is quite  
 , R 2 ‘worn



worn out with debauchery; and he nods over the grave, in anticipated old age; yet still he affects an air of levity and youth, and strives to inflame others, by his discourses, to vices, which he is no longer able to participate himself: but this is all grimace, and he assumes the appearance of gaiety, to hide the gloomy discontent and remorse that prey upon his heart.

There is something so particular, in the story of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the lowest state of poverty, amassed such wealth in trade, that his vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original. There is something so absurdly wrong, in purchased nobility, that it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution, for so flagrant an abuse of an institution, meant as a reward for merit. The *ennobled* man lived not to shew the truth of this observation, but his sons abundantly made up for that; the elder lavishing his wealth on every kind of expensive vanity; and the younger, the person you see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their *honour*.

In the course of a life of pleasure, he contracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom you see at the upper end of the room. Though nature had never meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the little powers she gave, he thought it would have been inconsistent with his character of a man of pleasure, not to commence an affair of gallantry with so desirable a person. Accordingly, as she happened to be married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her husband, into whose unguarded confidence he so far insinuated himself, as to receive many acts of friendship from

him,

him. To a man, who had any sense of honour, or honesty, this would have been an irresistible reason for desisting from his base design: but he was above such vulgar restraints, and genteely took the opportunity of the husband's friendship, to debauch the virtue of the wife.

Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy in the woman, could have given success to such an attempt, as the husband exceeded the paramour in every natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparison: but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for; it will loathe the most exquisite delicacies, and sate itself on garbage.

They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband, at the discovery! Had it been possible, he would have doubted his senses, which were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge, which his superior strength amply put in his power: but a moment's reflection shewed him the folly of such an action, and determined him to take the safer, and more severe revenge of the law.

Accordingly he withdrew, without being perceived by them, and bringing some of the servants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room in the height of their dalliance, and, coolly telling them, that it would be proper for them to choose another scene for their pleasure beside his house, retired and left them to their meditations.

This conduct convinced them of his design, and that they had not a moment to lose, to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it: as soon,

therefore, as they recovered from the first impressions of their astonishment, they directly departed together, and, concealing the place of their retirement, for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of the state as soon as possibly they could.

But they might have spared themselves that trouble; the revenge which the husband sought, was of another nature: he directly instituted a suit at law against them, by which, as he had a sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife, and such damages from the violator of his bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to his country, without he designed to languish out the rest of his days in a prison.

The lovers, in the mean time, were far from being happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Variety, and the mystery of intrigue, were all that tempted them to the correspondence at first; and now, that these were lost, reflection opened their eyes to the consequences of their folly, and, as soon as the divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preserve the appearance of a passion they never felt, and obtain a support for their families, which they could not have expected on any other terms.

When this was done, and that necessity removed, the aversion which they had long entertained, broke out in the most violent manner. They lived in a state of eternal warfare, in which the wife threw off all regard to decency, even so far as to take advantage of her superior strength, and frequently beat her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper lip! the third day of their happy marriage, he received that mark of her rage, from the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now supplies with artificial ones.

But



‘ But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here; where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; and completed the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband, to become his mistress, in which station you behold her at present.

‘ Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband for his own base crime, he was insensible of it; and, instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment in which you now see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice and insolence.

‘ But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awakened his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in the noise of vanity and vice.’

---

#### C H A P. XIV.

*The confessor entertains CHRYSAL's master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.*

**M**Y master was beginning to make some obvious reflections on this account; but his friend soon  
diverted

diverted his attention to another object: 'Observe,' (said he, pointing to a person, who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance), 'a striking proof of the insignificance of being born to wealth and honours! Who, that sees that despicable figure which this man makes here, a voluntary exile from his own country, where his rank and fortune placed him in the most exalted and advantageous light, can ever throw away a moment's thought on heaping up riches, or obtaining honours, to perpetuate his name, and aggrandize his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach?

'In a rank, scarce inferior to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune sufficient to support it, with dignity to himself, and benefit to the community, did this man enter into life; but a few years of the dissipation of what is falsely called a life of pleasure, distressed his fortune, and debased his principles to such a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed to have recourse to the mean method of a mercenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and enable him to support the external appearance of his character.

'The constant consequences of such marriages, might be sufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous folly; but vanity possesses so absolute an empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification of it.

'The female whom this person pitched upon as proper for his purpose, by her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person, to attract or preserve love and esteem. But few are sensible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture  
to

to her, all her real friends took the alarm: they drew his character in proper colours; they showed her, that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses; and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connection with such a person before her in the strongest light: but all was in vain. Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence; and, so she could obtain them, she left the rest to chance.

Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made, to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune, to pay his debts, and pursue his pleasures; and she rode in a coach with coronets, and was called *her Grace*.

But this mutual happiness did not last long: the moment he got possession of her fortune, all his wishes were fulfilled; and, as he had nothing farther to expect, he did not think it necessary for him to continue any appearance of love, or even complaisance, for an object really disagreeable to him. Accordingly, the very morning after his marriage, he set out upon a party of pleasure with some of his former companions, and left the bride by herself, to receive the compliments, and go through the farce usual upon such occasions.

Though such behaviour must appear base and ungenerous to the last degree, yet she had no right to complain of it, as she could not expect any other from his known character, and motives for marriage: she therefore put the best face on the matter; and, whether from intoxication at her elevation, or indifference to him, seemed to be insensible of the slight, and went through the ceremony and parade with all the appearance of pleasure and content, leaving him to pursue his own inclinations without molestation or complaint.

But this calm did not hold long. As soon as her new dignity lost the charms of novelty, nature awoke,



‘ woke, as from a dream, and convinced her, that  
‘ something more than empty show was necessary to  
‘ human happiness: but alas! this conviction came  
‘ too late; and all her expostulations were as ineffec-  
‘ tual to induce the tenderness or esteem of her hus-  
‘ band, as those of her friends had been with her  
‘ to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary,  
‘ they turned his indifference into aversion, and made  
‘ him treat her with indignity and contempt; insult-  
‘ ing her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that  
‘ had prompted her to sacrifice her fortune for a bare  
‘ title.

‘ Hard as such treatment was to be submitted to,  
‘ she had no redress, but was obliged to bear it in  
‘ silence, without even the poor consolation of com-  
‘ passion to mitigate her sufferings. At length, a  
‘ farther aggravation of her wrongs gave her the  
‘ pleasure of revenge, by driving him again into the  
‘ distresses from which her folly had relieved him.

‘ In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had sa-  
‘ crificed his character and fortune, he never had the  
‘ excuse of a refined taste, or particular passion, to  
‘ palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example  
‘ of his companions, or was a slave to every gross  
‘ impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion  
‘ of delicacy, or even decency, to direct him. As he  
‘ was strolling alone about his own house one unhap-  
‘ py evening, when he had no company to divert his  
‘ thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to o-  
‘ verhear two persons, a male and female, in earnest  
‘ conversation. Curiosity prompted him to listen: he  
‘ soon perceived that love was the subject of their dis-  
‘ course, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he  
‘ knew to be one of his huntsman’s helpers, was so  
‘ successful, that he persuaded the fair one to pro-  
‘ mise him a meeting, half an hour after, in the  
‘ dog-kennel.

‘ Thought

' Though the place of assignation might have de-  
 ' terred any person, whose senses, as well as his in-  
 ' clinations, were not totally debauched, from at-  
 ' tempting to supplant the happy lover, the novelty  
 ' of such an adventure made his Lordship overlook  
 ' that, and resolve to supply his dog-boy's place.  
 ' Accordingly he retired unperceived, and, going in-  
 ' to the stables, ordered him to be called, and sent  
 ' him directly on a message some miles off, without  
 ' giving him an opportunity of letting his mistress  
 ' know any thing of the matter.

' As soon as the time appointed drew near, his  
 ' Lordship went to the agreeable scene, where the  
 ' punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As  
 ' he was about the dog-boy's size, and the place was  
 ' quite dark, she never perceived the change put up-  
 ' on her, but lavished her caresses upon him with the  
 ' greatest tenderness, vowing never more to have any  
 ' correspondence with the pantry-boy or scullion,  
 ' who, it seems, were the dog-boy's formidable ri-  
 ' vals, but to be always constant to him alone; and  
 ' took her leave of him, with a promise to meet him  
 ' there at the same time next evening.

' Disgusting, as every circumstance of this affair  
 ' should have been, the oddity of it, with the plea-  
 ' sure of supplanting another, even so mean a person,  
 ' and in so unworthy an object, made him determine  
 ' to be punctual to her appointment. But then the  
 ' difficulty was, how to prevent his rival's traversing  
 ' his design; for his delicacy was not in the least  
 ' alarmed at the thought of his participating her fa-  
 ' vours. He was also at a loss to know who the  
 ' obliging female might be; for the darkness that  
 ' concealed him, was equally favourable to her, and  
 ' he was a stranger to her voice; nor did he care to  
 ' ask any questions, as that would betray his own  
 ' imposture, and bring on an explanation that he did  
 ' not desire, both as his greatest pleasure was in the  
 ' cheat,

• cheat, and the discovery might be attended with  
 • circumstances he should choole to avoid, in case the  
 • female was disagreeable to him.

• To obviate all these inconveniencies, he ordered  
 • his rival to attend him the very moment he returned,  
 • when he gave him a letter to carry that instant to  
 • a gentleman, who lived about twenty miles off,  
 • with directions to be back early next day with an  
 • answer. This he said aloud, in the hearing of all  
 • his servants, that, if his mistress should happen to  
 • hear of her lover's being sent from home, she might  
 • also have reason to expect his return time enough to  
 • keep the appointment: but to prevent this, he had  
 • desired the person to whom he wrote, to keep the  
 • messenger, as for an answer of the letter, two or  
 • three days; in which time, he concluded he himself  
 • should be tired of his amour.'

---

## CH A P. XV.

*Continued. His Lordship's scheme to sting his rival,  
 unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occa-  
 sions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss.  
 Law often spoils sport.*

• **P**LEASED with the sagacity of this scheme, he  
 • waited for the next evening, with an impati-  
 • - ence that he did not often feel on such occasions;  
 • but an unlucky accident disappointed his designs.  
 • The gentleman to whom he wrote the letter, hap-  
 • - pened not to be at home, nor was he expected for  
 • a day or two; wherefore, as his lord had ordered  
 • him to make haste back, he left the letter, and re-  
 • - turned without any delay, perhaps not more in obe-  
 • - dience to his orders, than from his impatience to  
 • retrieve



retrieve the disappointment his desires had met by his absence the evening before.

As soon as he alighted, therefore, his first care was to find out his mistress, to tell her the reason of his disappointing her the evening before, and to make a new assignation for that: but, what was their mutual surprise, when they came to compare notes! As he insisted on his not having attended the appointment, she flew into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed her basely to some of his companions; and, as she positively asserted her having met some person there, he accused her, with equal warmth, of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest vengeance, if he should ever find him out.

As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either side, it soon produced an absolute rupture between the lovers, who separated, with sentiments for each other very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his resentment cooled a little, recollected, that it might be proper to let his lord know the success of his message, who sent for him into his presence directly; and being freed from his apprehensions, by hearing that he was but that moment returned, ordered him to set out again instantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman wherever he was, and not return without an answer.

His orders were so urgent, that the fellow did not dare to make the least delay; but fortune, that seemed resolved to cross his Lordship's designs, contrived it so, that he met the gentleman on his road, without having called at home, or received the letter that had been left for him. Upon the dog-boy's informing him of it, he concluded, as he was much nearer to his Lordship's than to his own house, that it was the readiest way for him to wait upon

him directly, without minding to send the man for the letter. Accordingly he bade him turn back, and ride on before him, to acquaint his Lordship of his coming.

Though it was late when he had set out the second time, he had made such haste, that he reached home just at the time of his Lordship's appointment: when it unluckily came into his head, that his perfidious mistress might possibly have taken the advantage of his absence, to make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the first thing he did, the moment he dismounted from his horse, was to go there, to see if any one had invaded his territories.

Nor was his suspicion disappointed; for the fair one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery of the adventure the evening before, that she punctually attended her appointment, where she had not waited many minutes, before her unknown lover arrived. The scene of their meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for either of them to know the other. However, she soon thought of a method to remedy this, which was to purloin something out of his pockets, by which she might discover who he was, without betraying herself; for she soon found, that he knew no more of her, than she did of him.

She had just executed her design, and was taking her leave of her lover, when his jealous rival came upon them unawares, and, overhearing their expressions of fondness, was so enraged, that he resolved to take immediate revenge. Accordingly, he approached them without any noise, and, turning up the but-end of his whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a venture, that it felled his Lordship to the ground. The female, who instantly guessed what was the matter, took advantage of the darkness to make her escape, which she happily effected without any disaster, the dog-boy stumbling over

over his fallen adversary, the first step he advanced to pursue her.

His Lordship, half recovered from the blow, laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling with him directly, a battle ensued, in which nobility was so rudely handled, that his Lordship was obliged to declare himself, and cry out for quarter. It is easy to conceive the confusion of the conqueror upon this discovery: he instantly strove to disengage himself, and make his escape; but his Lordship held him fast, promising to forgive him though, if he would have the discretion never to mention a syllable of the affair, and inform him who the female was, with whom he had made the assignation to meet in this place the evening before.

These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore eternal secrecy, and readily told his Lordship, that the girl was no other than the kitchen-maid's daughter, who served as a scullion wench under her mother.

This discovery of his mistress's quality was almost as disagreeable to his Lordship, as the effects of the dog-boy's jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation; and, stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by himself, to change his clothes, and wash off the blood and dirt, with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rung for his valet de-chambre, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master's taste, was not in the least surprised at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly.



• The fortunate female, who had found out the  
• quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she  
• had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to  
• obey the glad summons, for fear she might be sus-  
• pected of having designedly occasioned the outrage  
• his Lordship had lately met : however, her ambition  
• getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to  
• be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing,  
• in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know  
• his Lordship's commands.

• If he had been surpris'd at the discovery of her  
• condition, he was much more agreeably so at the  
• sight of her ; for, though she was far from being  
• handsome, there was something in her face, which,  
• from her extreme youth, and a glow of health, that  
• her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fan-  
• cy in an uncommon manner. He, therefore, with-  
• out giving her the least hint of what had happened,  
• as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no  
• ceremony of proposing love to her. But young as  
• she was, she had too much woman in her soul to  
• comply so easily, though there was nothing she de-  
• sired more ardently. Accordingly, she refused his  
• Lordship with the most respectful modesty ; and, on  
• his urging his request farther, threw herself at his  
• feet, in a flood of tears, and begged him to have  
• compassion on her friendless youth and innocence.

• Such behaviour would have made him doubt the  
• dog-boy's information, did not the sound of her  
• voice convince him she was the person. He, there-  
• fore laughed at her artifice, and told her, that, as  
• soon as the farce was ended, he should expect an-  
• other answer, as he knew she had granted to others  
• the favour he asked of her.

• This convinced her that he had discovered her,  
• and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her  
• scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed,  
• of establishing a lasting interest in his affections.

• Accordingly,

Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees, in a seeming agony of distress, and, conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned that she had transgressed with one, and one only, who had made such an impression upon her heart, that, though she had taken him for another, and knew not even who he was, she had made a vow never to repeat her folly with any other.

The candour of this confession, the greatest part of which he thought he knew to be true, completed her conquest over him. He raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in public as his mistress, and had the address to accommodate herself so entirely to his caprices, that she soon gained the absolute mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off of course, as an offence to her sight, though not without a considerable gratuity, to purchase his silence; but that was impossible: the moment he left the house, he looked upon himself as freed from the necessity of concealing it any longer, and made it the common subject of his discourse, till it became as publicly known as his Lordship's name.

This happened just as his affairs became again so distressed, that he was forced to withhold the support he had allowed his wife. She therefore directly took the advantage of it, to sue him for a separate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be denied; and his infatuation was such, that he would not remove the cause, to avoid the consequence of the suit, but chose to quit his native country, and come here with his mistress, to live in the disesteem and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune which the law allows him for his support; the rest, much the

'greater part of it, being assigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his debts.'

---

## CH A P. XVI.

CHRYSA L's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT man.

**M**Y master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but, as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however a disagreeable picture, of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of the man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with since they had seen each other.

In the account given by my master, there were none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that,  
for



for the curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts, too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

• You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend, (said the stranger to my master) to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you, but because I had not arrived at any fixed period to make a proper pause at; and therefore, an imperfect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed: I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only, I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.——

• I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who were scarce able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had experience enough to see the folly of such a step: but my stay here was not long: to a man of sense, the obligation of a vow ceases with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent: and, as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world, to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity, to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found that I had not gained by the change,  
• the

' the slavery of a soldier's life being still more intole-  
 ' rable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse  
 ' to my former expedient for relief, and deserted, the  
 ' very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random  
 ' upon the world, without any particular point to di-  
 ' rect my course to; but this did not discourage me:  
 ' I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish  
 ' man has forged for himself, to prevent his rising in  
 ' life, and regulated my conduct solely by my con-  
 ' venience. This gave me a superiority over the rest  
 ' of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of.  
 ' I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and  
 ' soon found abundant opportunities of turning them  
 ' to my advantage.

' For some years, I lived a life of ramble, in the  
 ' course of which, I met with many adventures.—  
 ' At length, I thought my own country too nar-  
 ' row a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I  
 ' went to *Spain*, where I expected an ample harvest,  
 ' from the ignorance and superstition of the people;  
 ' but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and al-  
 ' most starved me into repentance of my expedition.  
 ' However, I proceeded to *Madrid*, where the cre-  
 ' dulity of a countryman of my own, made me a  
 ' mend for the reserve of the natives. He not only  
 ' relieved my immediate wants, which were too pres-  
 ' sing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands  
 ' some valuable materials for a literary work, from  
 ' which he expected both reputation and profit. But  
 ' I disappointed his hopes; for being tired of *Spain*,  
 ' I took the first opportunity of going to try my for-  
 ' tune in some other country, and carried all his pa-  
 ' pers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his  
 ' confidence. I had before experienced the inconve-  
 ' nience of depending upon charity, in a country  
 ' where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of  
 ' nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all  
 ' the money and valuable effects in his possession, to  
 ' defray

' defray the expences of my journey. As to the di-  
 ' stress this might throw him into, I never regarded  
 ' that a moment, no more than I did his being my  
 ' countryman. I despised the narrowness of thought,  
 ' that made such accidental circumstances of any  
 ' weight, when they clashed with my own particular  
 ' designs; and I esteemed the lesson I had taught him,  
 ' to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence  
 ' in, a sufficient recompence for his loss.—

' From *Spain* I directed my course to *Germany*,  
 ' where the political knowledge I acquired from my  
 ' late friend's papers, made me so much taken notice  
 ' of, that, after some time not disagreeably spent a-  
 ' mong the great, I was recommended to the prime  
 ' minister and favourite of the king of *Poland*, as a  
 ' proper person to be entrusted with the education of  
 ' his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I as-  
 ' sumed a fictitious name and title, and gave out, that  
 ' I had been obliged to leave my own country for an  
 ' affair of honour. My employment gave me fre-  
 ' quent opportunities of conversing with the father of  
 ' my pupil, to whom I displayed my skill in politics,  
 ' to such advantage, that I was soon admitted into  
 ' his esteem and confidence. In this intercourse I  
 ' had the honour of starting the first hint of that pro-  
 ' ject, which has since kindled the present war in *Ger-*  
 ' *many*; and will immortalize his name (for he has  
 ' had the ungenerous meanness to assume it to him-  
 ' self) to all ages.

' Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the de-  
 ' sires of any other man; but my ambition knew no  
 ' bounds: I thought my patron did not reward my  
 ' merit as it deserved; and in revenge, I resolved to  
 ' work his ruin. For this purpose, I entered into a  
 ' correspondence with several noblemen, who were  
 ' his enemies, and, taking advantage of the op-  
 ' portunities his confidence gave me, of seeing his pa-  
 ' pers, copied some, and counterfeited others, that

' I thought



‘ I thought necessary to my design, which was no  
‘ less than to raise a civil war, in which the minister  
‘ should be sacrificed, and his master dethroned. But  
‘ just as my plot was ripe for execution, it was dis-  
‘ covered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison,  
‘ where I was condemned to languish out the rest of  
‘ my days; my life being spared in compliance with  
‘ a foolish delicacy of my patron’s, who thought it  
‘ should be a disgrace to him, to have his son’s tutor  
‘ hanged.

‘ When I had lain here some time, an happy  
‘ thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a most  
‘ penitential letter to the Pope’s nuncio, in which I  
‘ discovered my true name, and my having fled from  
‘ my vows; and, pretending a thorough sense of my  
‘ guilt, and desire of returning to my order, begged  
‘ his intercession in my favour. My scheme succeed-  
‘ ed; he claimed me as an ecclesiastic, and the king,  
‘ whose mind was too intent on greater matters to think  
‘ of me, readily complied. I was accordingly releas-  
‘ ed from my prison; but instead of being set abso-  
‘ lutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was sent under a  
‘ guard of ecclesiastics to *Rome*, where all the favour I  
‘ could obtain, was to be ordered back to my convent.

‘ This was a great disappointment to me: but I  
‘ was obliged to submit. I accordingly set out,  
‘ guarded as before, but determined to take the first  
‘ opportunity of making my escape; which I at  
‘ length effected, after many vain attempts.

‘ To frustrate the pursuit of my guards, I fled into  
‘ *Switzerland*, where the name of liberty flattered my  
‘ hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing  
‘ I did there, was to abjure my religion, and profess  
‘ theirs, to conciliate their good opinion. This was  
‘ no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon  
‘ all religions with equal indifference. As I had no  
‘ money, I immediately commenced author. But  
‘ though I gained reputation, my profits were so in-  
‘ considerable,

considerable, that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind, when I tell you, that the affair they made so great a noise about, was only my denying a debt I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even want.

There were some other particulars indeed of my conduct, which would have met with a severe fate, had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had entered into an intimacy with a person of some fortune, who had an agreeable wife. The connections of the wife are always made with a view to some particular end. I had more than one in this acquaintance; the supply of my necessities, by the generosity of the husband, and the gratification of my pleasure, by the enjoyment of the wife.—I succeeded in both; but was prevented by an accident from enjoying my success long. The husband surprised us one day, in a situation that did not admit of doubt. He drew his sword, to have revenged his wrongs with my death; but I disappointed his design, by presenting a pistol at his head, which I always carried about me for fear of accidents. Upon this he ran out of the house in a kind of frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my situation, and that my safety depended upon a proper use of that moment. The wife had swooned away at the first sight of her husband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which I never went without, for any such emergency, that delivered her for ever from all fear of her husband's resentment. I had many reasons for doing this. It was in her power to make discoveries to her husband which I did not choose; beside, as the suspicion of her death would inevitably fall  
upon

upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his revenge. I then quitted the house, without being perceived. All things happened as I could wish. The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ignominious death, for the murder of his wife; and all his effects were confiscated to the state. It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion. He had laid open all he knew of the affair, by letter to his friends; but though they believed him, he had no evidence to support his charge, so that I despised his impotent accusations.

From Switzerland I once more turned my face to Germany, where my name was so famous for my political knowledge, that a war being just ready to break out, I received considerable offers from most of the parties concerned, to engage me in their service; but though I refused none, I resolved not to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could know which might prove most advantageous to me.

---

## CHAP. XVII.

*Continued.* He comes to ENGLAND, where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

AS England was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over and sound the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it be esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities



abilities, in so fertile a soil, inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people, and the terror of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension, that should enable me to spend the rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and ease.

Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in London, where I soon found, that, just as the notion I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity of prostituting the abilities, which I fondly hoped would have been employed in embroiling nations, to the deception of individuals, for the support of life: for all the wealth I was master of, consisted solely in the projects of my brain.

My success in this underplot made me some amends for the miscarriage of the other. I no sooner fixed my habitation, than I was crowded to by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom for things, which I had not the least probability of being ever able to pay for. But that gave me no concern; I accepted their offers, to such an amount, that I was immediately able to procure considerable sums of money, for other occasions, by the sale of commodities, which, so far from having occasion for, I scarcely knew the use of.

Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm; never reflecting that the day would soon come, when my inability to pay my present debts, would not only put a stop to these artificial resources, but also probably plunge me into the horrors of a gaol, for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure; I

• dressed, gamed, and intrigued, with people of the  
• first rank; and for some time was so intoxicated, as  
• to forget my first-purpose in coming over, and  
• think I could support this life for ever. Not that I  
• was ever so intent upon my pleasures, as to miss any  
• opportunity of procuring the means immediately  
• necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the  
• moment I threw off my designs upon the govern-  
• ment, I doubled my application, to turn the follies  
• of particulars to my own advantage, stopping at  
• nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the  
• world, to accomplish my designs.

• Such a life must necessarily involve me in a va-  
• riety of adventures, many of which, it is true, I  
• got not so smoothly over as I could wish; but I  
• had learned philosophy enough to take the bad with  
• the good, without repining at what it was not in  
• my power to redress.

• It would be endless to enter into a particular de-  
• tail of every thing I did and suffered in the course  
• of this life; I shall, therefore, only just mention  
• one or two affairs, which may serve to give you some  
• notion of the rest.

• As I particularly valued myself upon my literary  
• character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was  
• fonder of cultivating, than with men of letters; for  
• which I had also a farther motive, that as their at-  
• tention to books, generally made them strangers to  
• the ways of men, they were most easily to be made  
• the property of any mercenary designs.

• On both these accounts, I had taken lodgings  
• in the house of a clergyman, who, beside the cha-  
• racter of a man of learning, was also reputed to be  
• in easy circumstances. I soon found that he was a  
• person exactly fitted for my designs, and therefore  
• lost no time in making a proper impression on him.  
• The first step towards acquiring confidence, is to  
• place it yourself. I immediately made him my bank-

• er,

er, lodging every sum of money I won at play, or raised by the means I mentioned before, in his hands. As my success made these sums very considerable at first, he conceived an opinion of my being a person of consequence and fortune, above my appearance. This inspired him with such respect for me, that if, at any time, I even hinted an occasion for more than I had in his hands, he not only offered to supply me, but even looked upon my acceptance, as an honour. To confirm him in this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his offers, when I had no occasion, only that the punctuality of my payment might make him still the readier, whenever I should.

Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail myself of this scheme. A bad run at play stripped me of all my money, and my tradesmen brought in their bills, so that my former resources were at an end. In this difficulty, I applied to my landlord, who readily supplied me with all the money in his possession; and that not being sufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances should arrive from my estate.

This supply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the present moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and saw that this was the last money I could any ways expect to raise, as my practices began to be suspected, and every body had taken the alarm against me; so that if I parted with it, I should only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I therefore resolved to serve all my creditors alike, and go back to *Germany* with the money in my possession, leaving them to curse their credulity, and be more cautious for the future.

As I had still a considerable quantity of valuable effects in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them without giving the alarm to my



landlord; and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma, my ready genius prompted a scheme, that would not only secure me from him, but also gain me time to prepare for my decampment, with more convenience. Upon my first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution, which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my scheme, the morning after I had received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away, by appointment, I took the opportunity while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property, which I could clearly prove, taking away, at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to.

As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath, of my being robbed of a large sum of money, and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him several times coming out of my apartments, in evident confusion, and at times when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason of going into them; and this charge, I had confirmed by the testimony of my valet de chambre, and another person, whom I had prepared properly.

Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in *England* as in *Turkey*, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is in many respects not much less dreadful; the harpies of the law, never losing their hold, till they have devoured every

every thing in his possession. The warrant I demanded was readily granted, for this reason; and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers to execute it. We found my landlord, in the security of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible to express his astonishment, when they laid hold of him, like a thief, and told him it was upon my accusation. All the resolution and presence of mind I was master of, were requisite to bear me through the scene! At first he was unable to speak a word; which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe as a silent acknowledgment of his guilt; but, recovering himself for a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon me, gave me a look that almost froze the blood in my veins; but never deigned to speak a word to me.

He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired, that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sacred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should make him appear unworthy of the sanction of it.

Such behaviour had an effect, not to be described, upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment; and the tear of pity fell from eyes, that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly, I raised my voice, and with a stern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and search the house before his accomplices should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion, that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business, with their usual keenness, though still with respect, till they came to search his closet, where the sight of the things

which I had sworn to have been stolen from me,  
 appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they  
 treated him with all the indignity of the vilest  
 malefactor.

Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preserv-  
 ed a steadiness of temper, that seemed superior to  
 the power of fortune; but at this sight, his resolu-  
 tion failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raising  
 his hands and eyes to Heaven; Just God (said he)  
 thy will be done! thou knowest my innocence, and  
 art able to defend me!—and wilt defend me!  
 (said he) rising, and recovering his former spirits.

In the mean time, I seemed encouraged by this  
 success, to hope for the recovery of the money,  
 which I pretended to have lost also, and ceased not  
 to urge the officers to make the strictest search.  
 But this was not necessary; they ransacked every  
 place, and tossed about every thing that was too  
 large for them to convey away, till they made his  
 whole house one scene of desolation. They then  
 dragged him before the magistrate, where the find-  
 ing of the things gave such weight to the charge,  
 which I positively swore against him, that he was  
 on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would  
 certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it  
 not been for some unlucky prevarication in my  
 valet de chambre's evidence. This, with some sus-  
 picions that were suggested against my own cha-  
 racter, by the pawn-broker to whom I had sold the  
 goods I took up from my tradesmen, and who un-  
 fortunately happened to be present, gave the affair  
 such a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to  
 bail, till his innocence or guilt should be proved by  
 a public trial.

But it was far from my intention to wait for this.  
 The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the  
 house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered  
 my effects to be removed before, where I resolved  
 to



to prepare for my departure with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me the next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord; and therefore, that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and, though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a place privileged from the immediate power of the law. However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me, reproached me with what I had done. I therefore took the first opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful, as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to *Holland*; where I had the vexation to learn, that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him; but, though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent, and had procured for me, and the expence and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the savages in *America*, from the power of his more savage creditors."

## CH A P. XVIII.

*Continued.* He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in *ENG- LAND*. He that will not when he may, &c.—  
It is often better to play a poor game, than stand out:  
CHRYSAE arrives at LISBON.

I NO sooner arrived in *Holland*, the general rendezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that character

character once more, and that with such success, that the minister of a power in alliance with *England*, conceived such an opinion of my abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to that court, for an employment of the highest consequence, in one of the principal courts of *Germany*.

Though I was sensible, that my return to *England* must be attended with disagreeable, if not dangerous circumstances, from the general prejudices that were entertained there against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his offer; the former, which could consist only in impotent marks of dislike, I disregarded; and the latter, I judged my recommendation would enable me to defeat. Accordingly, I set out with the utmost privacy, and was safe in *London*, before my leaving *Holland* was even suspected by those who would have lain in wait for me.

The very morning after my arrival, I waited upon the minister to whom I was recommended with my letters, who received me very politely; and, upon the credit of the character given to him of me, entered into a familiar conversation on several subjects of intricacy and importance, in which I supported the character he had received of me so well, that he dismissed me, with an assurance of his protection and favour.

I now thought myself secure of my hopes; but the pleasure of this thought was of a very short continuance. The very next morning, I received a message from the minister, to attend him directly, which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability with which I expected to be received, upon my advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that seemed designed to search my very soul. After viewing me steadily thus for some moments, 'You are recommended to me (said he) as a man of abilities; and such I have found you to be:

' be : but you have imposed upon the person who  
 ' recommended you, and concealed your real charac-  
 ' ter from him, or he would never have entertained  
 ' so favourable an opinion of such an abandoned  
 ' wretch.—But I have unravelled the mystery of  
 ' your iniquities, and am guarded against your wiles.  
 ' —Your crimes call aloud for vengeance, and the  
 ' stroke of fate hangs over your head ; but, in hopes  
 ' you may repent, and amend your life, and in respect  
 ' to the recommendation you brought, (of which I  
 ' cannot give a stronger testimony than this), I will  
 ' give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the  
 ' ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly !  
 ' If you are found in this city an hour hence, or  
 ' make the least delay in any part of the kingdom,  
 ' (and all your steps are watched), you are to expect  
 ' no favour or protection. And, that you should not  
 ' plead inability to obey this injunction, take this  
 ' purse of gold, and let me never see your face more.'

' I need not tell you the effect this speech had up-  
 ' on me. I took the purse and retired, without  
 ' making any reply ; nor did I close my eyes in  
 ' sleep, till I had bid adieu to that inhospitable shore.

' On my return, I went to wait upon my former  
 ' patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never  
 ' to go there any more ; the account of my disgrace  
 ' in *England* having, as I learned afterwards, been  
 ' transmitted to him in the very ship that brought  
 ' me over.

' Though these miscarriages mortified my pride,  
 ' they did not deject my spirit. The gold given me  
 ' by the *English* minister, enabled me to support  
 ' myself, in a state of independence, for some time ;  
 ' during which, I successively offered to accept every  
 ' proposal that I had formerly rejected ; but I had  
 ' missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself  
 ' in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced  
 ' to despair, the employment I hold here was offered  
 ' to me, which, though far beneath my former hopes,

' I thought



‘ I thought it not prudent to refuse ; especially as it  
 ‘ opened to me an opportunity of venting my rage  
 ‘ with impunity upon all who had ever offended me.  
 ‘ I am literally hired to wage open war with truth,  
 ‘ honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to  
 ‘ support the exhausted spirits of the people ;—by  
 ‘ defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a  
 ‘ colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter ; and,  
 ‘ by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppres-  
 ‘ sion, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours  
 ‘ of authority, justice, and religion.

‘ To a man who retained any of the prejudices of  
 ‘ the world, and did not examine things in the sim-  
 ‘ plicity of nature, such a task must be most disagree-  
 ‘ able. But to me, all things are indifferent, as I  
 ‘ know all things are alike.’

Here my master’s friend concluded his history ; the  
 enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit,  
 had it been related by any body but himself, though,  
 as I have told you before, I have omitted the blackest  
 particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview, my master left  
*Brussels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Lisbon*, du-  
 ring the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth  
 relating.

---

## CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSALE comes, at LISBON, into the possession of a for-  
 mer acquaintance. His master makes the great at-  
 tempt without success. Several of the nobility are  
 sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty  
 of this fact. CHRYSALE’s master is at length taken  
 up ; and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a *Peruvian*  
 acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no less so, when I  
 found,

found, that the person to whom he sent me in *Lisbon*, was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man chosen for *the great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly the blow was struck a few nights after, but, in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The King was shot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an instantaneous stupefaction of fear, which is often taken for resolution and presence of mind, the King fell down in the coach, and spoke not a word, which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confusion the next morning, when he found, that the King, though severely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable that another should offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action; for secrets of this importance, are always entrusted to as few as possible.

While

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost afraid to converse with his brother, for fear of being suspected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the most mysterious silence was observed, and all conversation on the subject discouraged. This was thought to be the most probable way of coming to the knowledge of so dark an affair, as their spies could thereby mix with the people with less suspicion, and make their observations with the greater certainty, when they should be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was struck, was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice; for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reason for suspecting them of this fact, was, that, upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the King was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person or court.

Such an indignity, he was sensible, must alarm the resentment of a set of men, not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts: he had therefore taken every precaution to guard against them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only against disturbance in the state; for of such an attempt as this, he could not suspect them.

While things hung in this suspense, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to describe them.

I have



I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present *Portuguese*. A people, of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted, and so strong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning; and, before they had recovered from the consternation which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being swallowed up by an earthquake.

Such signal instances of the wrath of Heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or I should rather say of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was, to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whose good-nature had given effectual relief to their distress.

At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love meeting. The person with whom he had been, was descended from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country, whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour

of her being with child, having extorted some inadvertent, illative, general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger, arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses which he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected; they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations, and strained inferences of those, who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair; the miscarriage of his attempt, having made it necessary for him to disburse the money, among which I came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been, to see him, an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment.

But his triumph was not long; secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, such information of them, as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and justice, to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity. A step that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudice in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke under which they had so long blindly groaned, that at length they thought it just and natural.

Accordingly, in the midst of his security, my master was seized, and hurried away to a prison with the rest of his brethren; and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the order, never to keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger them, or their designs; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who, in his search, took an opportunity to secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of detection.



## CHAP. XX.

CHRYSALE meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest AMINADAB. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at LISBON, in which CHRYSALE suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. CHRYSALE enters into a new service.

I WAS scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his counting-house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprise of my master less: 'O, God of Abraham (said he) is not that the son of my brother Aminadab! Where hast thou been? And where is thy father? He has been sought from Dan to Beersheba! His spoiling that Gentile, that Egyptian woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! But I am amazed to see thee here; I hope he is safe out of the reach of every Christian power.'

'O brother of my father, (replied the son of Aminadab) mention not that unhappy affair, if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with grief. My father is dead!——' But where is the wealth, nephew, (interrupted my master hastily) where is the wealth?——' All lost! all buried with him in the bottom of the ocean,' (replied the nephew).——' All lost! The wealth all lost! O my brother! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of Jerusalem there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe. The wealth all lost! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother!——' Alas, my father, I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; I have not eaten bread this day; let us retire into  
the

the inner chamber, and when my soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread, and a drop of water, I will put ashes on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy story to thee.

The repast was literally what he had asked; and as soon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle seated on the floor together, in the posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus:

By the letters which my father wrote to thee from *England*, in the sacred cypher of our family, thou wert informed of his intended return into his native land of *Africa*, and invited to meet him at *Tetuan*, and share his fortune. This he told me while we were upon our voyage; but thy better angel prevented thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of such a journey in vain.

The ship, on board which we unfortunately embarked, was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coast of *Italy*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from whence we knew we could get an immediate passage over. But, behold, when we were just in view of the port, when the sight of his native land made the very soul of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing but safety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave chase to our ship. The *Dutch* captain immediately crowded all the sail he could to escape; but the wind dying away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to bring a pass.

This news was like a clap of thunder to my father, who too well knew the consequence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his possession.—Wretch that I am! (exclaimed he) why did I venture with one of thy sordid nation? slaves to MAMMON, who would hazard liberty and fortune to save such a trifle?—Then turning about, and going into his cabin, he stood some moments as if lost in thought,

when bursting into an ecstatic rage, he snatched up the coffer in which his gold and jewels were, from under the head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly, 'I have gained thee, (said he) I have earned thee with anxiety and toil; and I will not lose thee now!—O Jonas! send thy whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers: I will not be a laughing-stock to the Gentiles, nor a by-word in my father's house.'—Saying which words he rushed upon the deck, and before any person could possibly prevent him, he plunged into the sea, with the coffer in his arms, and was never seen more.

While all stood amazed at his rashness, the heavens, as if appeased with this sacrifice, immediately sent a wind that filled our fluttering sails, and so bore the ship, delivered thus of its *Jonas*, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can describe, the situation I was in at this event: I prostrated myself on the shore when we landed at *Gibraltar*, and bewailed my misfortune with tears and lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my distress; and something I must do to earn a morsel of bread. I therefore sold all my superfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our money was in the coffer, and with these did I purchase some eggs and fruit, which I sold again in the garrison, to support my life, till I should have an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice and assistance in this distress; and now behold these four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is all my wordly wealth.

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained silent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words: 'It is in vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied; holy *David* wept no longer for his child after he was dead: let us therefore arise, and think of something that may, if not retrieve the mighty loss, at least



least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the weight, without effacing the image, on the golden coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of thy father, who began the world as poor as thou art now, till his unwearied industry in this practice raised him from want. Follow thou therefore his example; and may the God of thy fathers give thee the same success, but with an happier blessing than he found.

And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I have this very hour received a large quantity of the coin of *Britain*, all new from the mint. On that therefore thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine: I was just going to have sent for another, who always works for me for a fifth: but I am willing to give thee a profit extraordinary, to encourage thee.

Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to *London*, and purchase old clothes, which will bring great profit in *Germany*, as soon as this war shall be at an end.

Till thou art able to provide for thyself, thou mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof. Be not dejected: *honest* industry never fails of success.

The young *Aminadab* was no sooner introduced thus into a way of *honest* industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; so that, from a thousand of us, who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure

allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure: but, alas, vain boast! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial, with all the marks of age and deformity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myself and my companions to a number of *British* soldiers, just come from *Soup Maigre* and straw, in a *French* prison.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be sent to *England*, against whom this trade was mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the disgrace of such diminishing. But before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the family of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer stay in *Lisbon*.

I have told you, that, in secret, he was a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrors of the inquisition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no sooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than, thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient beside, to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaism*, with directions how to detect him in it; concluding, that, when he should be seized, there would be no inquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though

though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himself with the thought, that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For, when the officers of the inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death, not less cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquisition.

Of all the human sufferings I yet had seen, except in the case of the *sacrificers*, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which, I was delivered the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew.—I have before given you my sentiments, on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the *human passover* of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the Christian dispensation than any other, as, beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of Christianity do every where clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty, under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said,

ON



on this subject already, and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches, who are brought before this tribunal, are so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.

## CH A P. XXI.

*An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON and ILISSA.*

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of the most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the *Portuguese*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which showed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus, 'Thou art once more brought to this tribunal; to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.'—'I told thee before, O judge of the faith of Christians, (replied the prisoner, with a composed look and determined voice); I told thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am not conscious of any thing that should incur the censure of this tribunal; nor shall all the tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body, make me lie against mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt to which

'I am

‘ I am a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused,  
 ‘ and my conscience shall direct my lips to answer  
 ‘ thee the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have  
 ‘ erred; thou knowest that I have not always pro-  
 ‘ fessed the Christian faith according to the laws  
 ‘ established here: pardon then the errors of mine  
 ‘ ignorance, and instruct me to avoid the like for the  
 ‘ future. And, O! I adjure thee by thy Christian  
 ‘ faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that  
 ‘ tears it, for the fate of my daughter! O, let me  
 ‘ know’——

His adjuration was broken off at these words by the officers of the court; and his answer not being satisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any farther questions, with the strongest menaces of severity; though, in secret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and respect, and supplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid dress, retired to his own apartments, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to desire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love: ‘ I have seen thy father, my dearest  
 ‘ *Ilissa*, (said he), and he is well; nor shall any human means be wanting to preserve him so.’

‘ Why then may I not see him? (replied the lady);  
 ‘ how can I trust thy words? thou hast already deceived me.’——‘ Thou knowest, my love, (returned  
 ‘ he), that thy request is impossible; and if I have  
 ‘ deceived thee, by promising compliance with it, it  
 ‘ was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that,  
 ‘ in a cooler moment, thou mightst hearken to the  
 ‘ voice of love and happiness.’——‘ Mention not happiness to me in this place. Can happiness be without  
 ‘ liberty? Is a prison the proper scene for love? But  
 ‘ I will

' I will be deceived no longer ! I will see my father,  
 ' or I will not live. Grant me this request, and ex-  
 ' pect my gratitude. Thou knowest, that for myself  
 ' I fear not thy power ; thou knowest, that immediate  
 ' death is ever in my reach : trifle not therefore with  
 ' me any longer ; restore me to my father ; restore  
 ' us both to liberty ; and then, then only, speak to  
 ' me of love. — Thou hast conquered, my *Ilissa* !  
 ' thou hast conquered ! Your father shall be restored  
 ' to you ; and we will all fly together to thy native  
 ' land, where we shall live in happiness : but this  
 ' cannot be compassed on a sudden ; it will require  
 ' both time and address to secure our retreat. But  
 ' when I have done this for my *Ilissa*, can I be sure  
 ' of her love ? Will her heart return the sacrifice I  
 ' make ? — I have told thee, that my heart is grate-  
 ' ful ; I tell thee now, it is not insensible to softer  
 ' passions : urge me no farther : when I am freed from  
 ' this prison, and my father is present, to give the  
 ' sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise  
 ' thee to become thy wife : and my inclination,  
 ' which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not  
 ' find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar.'

These words raised my master's heart into an ec-  
 stasy ; he prostrated himself at her feet ; he kissed her  
 hand, and swore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes  
 for their escape, and planning scenes of future hap-  
 piness ; in the prospect of which, their unequal years  
 seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be  
 about eighteen ; her beauty, though very great, was  
 rather majestic than soft : different from the Bohe-  
 mian lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept  
 every one around her at an awful distance, and the  
 flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart  
 it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian,  
 but still in all the vigour of life, and far from dis-  
 agreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There



There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart, that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return.

The lady refused not his request; but, at giving it, desired he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *spirit of the golden case*. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I *shewed* him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a *look* which signified these words:—‘There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire.

‘The father of the young lady, who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abyssinia*, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

‘From the first dawn of reason in the mind of *Pheron*, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here; yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality; the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time, consumed here in fruitless speculation, devoted to it; by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise.—In this happy employment

passed the first years of the youth of *Pheron*, till  
 ripen manhood calling him to the service of his coun-  
 try, he went, at the head of his father's vassals, to  
 repel the invasions of the *Ethiopians*.

His success was so great in this first essay of his  
 arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but  
 also carried the war into their own country, where,  
 after many victories, he compelled them to sue for  
 peace.

The fame of his actions soon reached the ears of  
 his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and  
 rewarded his services, by giving him his sister in  
 marriage. Dignities in those countries are not  
 prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness.  
*Pheron* returned home with his bride, to govern and  
 protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued  
 their usual occupations; war not being made there  
 a constant profession, nor the gratification of the  
 worst passions of human nature reduced into a sci-  
 ence, and practised by rule.

The peace which *Pheron* had made, was not in-  
 jurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved  
 by them, which gave him leisure to attend to the  
 improvement of his country, and instruction of his  
 people.

He had lived in this happy state some years, when  
 there arrived a person in his country, who gave an  
 unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of  
 those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves  
 rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen  
 in an age among them. This made the arrival of  
 this man the more taken notice of: he was im-  
 mediately introduced to *Pheron*, to whose friendship,  
 his knowledge in several branches of science, soon  
 recommended him.

When the stranger had thus established an interest  
 with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive  
 of his coming into a country so remote from his own:  
 he

he told him, that he had undertaken this hazardous and painful journey, in pure obedience to the divine command, of instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of salvation. He explained to him the *mysteries* of the Christian religion, the *hierarchy* of Rome, the divine foundation of its power, and the several orders in its government, in so forcible a manner, that he soon made a convert of him.

*Pheron had always adored the name of Christ, but never till now knew what it was to be a Christian.* One only book of his gospel had he ever seen; and from that he could understand no more, than that *faith in the death of Christ for the redemption of mankind, and obedience to the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious worship of the one God alone, was the whole religion taught by him.*—It is not strange, therefore, if the glorious fabric of the church, as represented by this Jesuit, for such he was, had all the effect he could desire upon him; the naturally inquisitive turn of his mind, making him listen with eagerness to every thing which seemed to open a new prospect to it.——Nor was he content with knowing himself those sublime doctrines: he also instructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved; and their example converted the greatest part of his people; for nothing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their assent.——But this did not satisfy him; the descriptions which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glory of Rome, had filled his soul with an ardent desire to see that metropolis of the world, that he might learn its virtues, and transplant them into his own country. He communicated this thought to his instructor, who, fired with the glory of such a proselyte, encouraged him in it, by every argument he could use.——This determined his resolution to make an attempt, the hazards of which would be rewarded with such happy consequences. He therefore prepared all things for his journey, in which



his wife would bear him company, and, also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his *Holiness*; and, committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold, to an immense value, to defray the expences of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the *Red Sea*, where he embarked on board a ship for *Alexandria*.

While he waited here for a ship bound to *Italy*, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard; and his care for his daughter made him careful for himself.

— His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He therefore sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at *Rome*.

With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for *Europe*, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but, for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at *Leghorn*; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on his passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately seized both *Pheron* and his daughter, for errors in their opinions, and confined them in the prisons of the holy office, where they have now been above a year.

The first motive of this outrage was the stranger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court; and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred

‘deferred their fate, and, by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.’

---

C H A P. XXII.

*The love adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an ENGLISH sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.*

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love, to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and, taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Iliffa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron*; and, in the illusion of imagination, he cried out, ‘It is in vain! my conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures!’—As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when, seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprise, to be continued, and he proceeded thus:—‘I have told thee, that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood; and now thou shalt find it so.’

‘O father of *Iliffa*, (returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight) I come not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy soul.’—‘Art not thou the inquisitor?’—‘I am, O *Pheron*, and thy friend.’—‘Am I awake? Is this, or

' was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good hea-  
 ' ven! let me not fall from virtue!'—'Such virtue  
 ' ever is the care of Heaven!—*Phéron*, behold thy  
 ' friend, the profelyte of thy virtues.—The time ad-  
 ' mits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty,  
 ' and concert with thee the methods for our obtain-  
 ' ing happiness. Thy *Iliffa*!—'Heaven guard my  
 ' child!'—'Thy *Iliffa* is well, and happy in her fa-  
 ' ther's welfare!'—'O my child! my child! but  
 ' shall I ever see her again?'—'You shall, she  
 ' shall be restored to your bosom, and never turn  
 ' from it more.'—'Good, gracious Judge! O, when?  
 ' O, how?—my child! my child!'—'Suppress your  
 ' joy a moment; the beauties of *Iliffa* have triumph-  
 ' ed over the malice of her fate! She has found a lo-  
 ' ver, who offers happiness to her and you.'—'Does  
 ' my child love him? Is he an honest man?'—'His  
 ' life will prove him such; he offers to restore you  
 ' and your *Iliffa* to liberty, and to accompany you  
 ' both to your native country, for there can be no  
 ' safety in *Europe* for you, after you leave this place;  
 ' your escape from whence, and every circumstance  
 ' relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will  
 ' he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your  
 ' safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his  
 ' sincerity.'

' O name the generous man!'—'Behold him at your  
 ' feet! receive me for your son.'—'Thee! the inqui-  
 ' sitor! who threatened me with torture!'—'But treat-  
 ' ed thee with tenderness, treated *Iliffa* with respect.'  
 '—Make me know that.'—'I ask no favour, but on  
 ' that condition. If I procure liberty for you and  
 ' your *Iliffa*; if I restore you to your native land, and  
 ' accompany you thither; if your *Iliffa* acknowledges  
 ' the services of my love, and asks your consent to  
 ' reward them, will you confirm my bliss, and own  
 ' me for your son?'—'I will, and thank kind Hea-  
 ' ven that gives me such a son.'

Saying



Saying this, he embraced my master, who in a few words let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to prosecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquisition, there was confined an English seaman, who had been seized, and secretly conveyed thither, for some disrespectful expressions against the *Divinity of St. Dominic*.

The manly, modest resolution, with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor, as the person proper for his design; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother, whose treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, the sailor, whose soreness prevented his sleeping very sound, perceived him, and imagining it was a summons to a repetition of the torture, he sprung up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, 'Hollo! who comes there?'—The inquisitor advancing, answered, 'A friend.'—'Aye! damn all such friends, (replied the sailor) I suppose you are come to give me another roasting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd send you off with a salt eel for your supper.'—'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to set you free, if you desire, and will deserve it.'—'Avast haling, brother! I do not understand you.'—'Why, do not you desire to be free?'—'—Desire! aye! that I do! but I may whistle for that wind long enough, before it will blow.'—'Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine: what would you do to be free?'—'Do! I'd burn the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor's throat! I'd do any thing, but turn papist, or fight against *Old England*.'—'Honest Briton! But suppose I should set you free; would you serve me faithfully in one thing, that is neither against your

“ your country, nor your religion ?— Belay that, and  
 “ I’ll warrant you, if I say it, I’ll do it without more  
 “ words. I’m no landsman nor Portuguese.”— “ Well  
 “ then, I’ll take your word, and so come with me.”—  
 The sailor was so surpris’d, he scarce knew whether  
 he was asleep or awake : however, as soon as the in-  
 quisitor had unlocked his chains, he shrugged his  
 shoulders, and followed him without more questions.

When they were come into my master’s apartment,  
 he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some  
 wine to cheer his spirits, “ You are now at liberty,  
 “ my friend, (said he) without any farther condition,  
 “ and may go where you please : but if you will serve  
 “ me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall  
 “ have reason to think of this night with pleasure as  
 “ long as you live.”— “ Serve you, master ! (replied  
 “ the sailor) that I will ! name but what you would  
 “ have me do ; that is, as I said before, you under-  
 “ stand me ; and I’ll do it, though it was to hand the  
 “ main top-gallant sail, in a storm at mid-night, when  
 “ the yard was broke in the flings, and it was not  
 “ my watch ; for if it was a man’s watch, do you see,  
 “ it would be but his duty, and there is no merit in  
 “ a man’s doing his duty : I am no flincher, I never  
 “ say aye when I mean no : though I say it, I am a  
 “ gentleman ; my father was lieutenant of a man of  
 “ war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty  
 “ years man and boy, and never was once brought to  
 “ the gang-way in all that time. If the noble captain  
 “ that rated me a midship-man twenty years ago, had  
 “ lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer  
 “ before now.”

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the  
 sailor’s giving his own character, made my master  
 hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence  
 in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he  
 opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook  
 to go to *London*, buy a good ship, and freight her for  
*Alexandria*,

*Alexandria*, and to call at *Lisbon* in his way, and take my master and his friends aboard; to do which, he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in *London*, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought he turned short on the inquisitor, 'Steady, (said he) steady; so far we go right before the wind, and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? if it is the *Pretender*, or the *French king*, here, take back your *trineams*; I'll be damn'd before I'll help either of them to make his escape.' — 'Never fear, my friend, (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter, at the strangeness of such a thought) I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.' — 'But shall we not have one dash at this damn'd place? (added the sailor) shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at the *Devil Dominic*: shall we not set the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat?' — 'We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you, not to be seen in *Lisbon* at present; and to be as expeditious as possible in your return?' — 'Never fear, master; never fear, (replied the sailor); and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.'

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.



## CHAP. XXIII.

*The sailor goes to LONDON, buys a ship, and returns to LISBON, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a FRENCH ship. He lands his passengers at ALEXANDRIA, returns home and marries. CHRYSAE quits his service.*

**M**Y new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the sea-side, without ever stopping to look behind him; and luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of *Lisbon* before morning.

Never was an heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his; he thought of nothing else all the passage; and the moment he arrived in *London*, he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and, having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for *Lisbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for young Aminadab had made such depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my master's honour would not think of parting with me for less, without acquainting the person from whom he had received me. — The moment he arrived in *Lisbon* he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly aboard, and as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends, in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and cutting the inquisitor's throat.

Heaven.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of their voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and, with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, *owner*, you shall now see what *English* boys can do: there is a large *Frenchman* bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along-side of us; and, as I expected some such thing, I took a letter of marque, so that you need not fear being hanged for a pirate, if the worst should happen.'

But delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his *owner*, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure, which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabin, that he should not be observed by the men, and sending for my master, accosted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship, (for we were *lying to*) she certainly means to attack you.'—'And so let her, *owner*, (replied my master); I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings.'—'But consider, my friend, returned the inquisitor) consider we are on board you.'—'Well, *owner*, and what then? you are not afraid:

'afraid: the lady may be stowed safe below; and  
 'you'll stand as good a chance as another; you are not  
 'afraid.'—'My good friend, I have not time to ex-  
 'plain my reasons to you; but if you have any re-  
 'gard for me, you will instantly crowd all the sail you  
 'can, and get clear of this affair; I desire it; I beg  
 'it.'—'Why, look you, *owner*, what needs all these  
 'words? if so be you order us, we must put about  
 'to be sure, for the ship is yours: but then, the ho-  
 'nour of *Old England*, consider that; the honour of  
 '*Old England*!'—'O my friend, I can consider no-  
 'thing but my desire to avoid this danger; so once  
 'more I beg'—'Enough said, enough said.'  
 Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our *owner*  
 'does not choose this brush, while the lady is on  
 'board; so we must about ship: but as we come  
 'back, *Soup Maigre* shall pay for it.'—And saying  
 this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully  
 as if it had been his own, only not with the same ap-  
 pearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculat-  
 ing, *Damn fear!* at every turn of the tune he whist-  
 led as he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his *owner's* instruc-  
 tions, in getting a good ship, that we were soon out  
 of sight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with  
 any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the  
 voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all reco-  
 vered their good humour, my master addressed his  
*owner* thus:—'Now, *owner*, while the sky is clear,  
 'and we have nothing else to do, I had better give  
 'you an account of your money. Here is the log-  
 'book, which you may overhale at your leisure,  
 'though the sooner the better. This is the time;  
 'there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as  
 'may happen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a  
 'new cable: but I must give you one point to direct  
 'your reckoning by; and that is this; you bade me  
 'buy



• buy a ship, and freight her, and so forth, and she  
 • and the cargo should be my own, after I have done  
 • your job this trip. Now, *owner*, it is very true,  
 • that a less vessel than this might have made the  
 • run; but then you seemed so desirous to be safe,  
 • that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout  
 • ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever  
 • turned to windward, and able to go, hank for  
 • hank, with any thing that swims the sea, as we  
 • shewed when we run the *Frenchman* out of sight  
 • yesterday; though it went again my heart to do  
 • it; but no matter for that now; the ship is yours,  
 • and you have a right to be obeyed. However,  
 • there is the accompt, and here is the rest of your  
 • money, of which I did not lay out one shilling  
 • that I could avoid, but one guinea, which I gave  
 • to my old mess-mate *Will Crofstree*, whom I met  
 • on *Tower-hill* in distress; and one I gave *Black*  
 • *Moll* of *Wapping* to *beave down*; and I could not  
 • well avoid those either, for *Will* was an old mess-  
 • mate, and I owed *Moll* for many a good turn in  
 • her way; but all this signifies nothing to you;  
 • they can be stopped in account; and here is a damn-  
 • ed guinea too, that would not go; I believe it  
 • has been in the hospital till it was *fluxed* off its  
 • legs.

• And now, *owner*, as you may think this ship  
 • cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I  
 • will not keep you to your bargain; she is your own  
 • and all that is in her, only pay the men: as for me,  
 • I am satisfied with having got out of that damn'd  
 • inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you  
 • think that I have deserved any thing, well and  
 • good; if not, I do not fear bread, while the sea  
 • flows round *Old England*: all that grieves me is  
 • that you would not let us set fire to the inquisition,  
 • and cut the inquisitor's throat.'—If my master's  
 • bluntness in the affair of the *French* ship, gave offence:

to his *owner*, the honesty of this speech restored him to his warmest esteem; and made *Phoron*, who was present, cry out in rapture, 'Thank Heaven there is still some honesty among mankind.'—'Honesty?' 'aye, (replied my master) a little among the tars of *Old-England*; a little.'

The inquisitor having by this time recovered from the astonishment, into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the account unopened, with these words: 'I am convinced your account must be just; and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already; but of the rest of the money which is in your hands.'—'What! all, *owner*! all!'—'All, my friend: if it were many times so much, you justly merit it.'—'But then, *owner*, had not you better sign the account if you please, for fear of after reckonings with your executors? for I hate the law damnably, ever since I lost a year's pay for hindering our boatswain's mate's brother to beat his wife. The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault that set her on: damn all lawyers, say I.'—'Well, then, my honest worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to your merit; and you cannot have more.'—'Enough said, *owner*; enough said; I thank you; I thank you.'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they soon set out for *Phoron's* country, and, at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which he assured them were not better than *bum-boats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that, as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Gosport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to speak so till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing though I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant look-out all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman* whom he had fled from, so sore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of *Old England*.

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve-buttons, to present to his mistress the morning before his marriage.

---

#### C H A P. XXIV.

*CHRYSAL arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.*

THE diminution of my size, which had made my late master careless about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent scruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my present value, for me.

I did not remain long in his possession: he passed me off as soon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a division of the loss, in the purchase of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad.— Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces,



which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners: but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size kept me prisoner here till *Saturday* night; when my master always puts off his light coin, just before he shuts his shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply, for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on *Monday*, and so must even bear the loss.—Such a person did he think you, and accordingly gave me to you; but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were *the chosen of ten thousand, the first born of science*, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand; through the dark labyrinth of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most *occult wisdom*, and to entrust you with the command of *that chain* which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you shewed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's-shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived: *Nature labours in the throws of the mystic birth; and lo! the philosophic king arises in all the glory of the morning! Attend to my*

*my words; receive the consummation of human knowledge.*

To apprehend this secret cause, you must know

\* \* \* \* \*

O doleful and deplorable event! never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears! Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor,\* where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burden under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the one moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness; such the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

### CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether

Y 3

thou

\* See the Preface.

thou art a taylor, whose principal debtor is made a lord; a physician, whose *mystrum* is discovered; a cobbler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure; a poet, whose play is refused, or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament just before its dissolution: attend to the instruction in my words, and learn wisdom from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future: let reason curb expectation; reduce imagination to common sense; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants: so shall industry banish necessity from your habitation, and content turn all your possessions into gold.

THE END.





le a  
ob-  
am-  
fed,  
ur-  
on:  
wif-  
ent,  
ec-  
and  
real  
ha-  
into

tion  
tion

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and

and